

IN THE MATTER OF AN ARBITRATION BEFORE A TRIBUNAL
CONSTITUTED
IN ACCORDANCE WITH THE TREATY BETWEEN THE U.S.A. AND THE
REPUBLIC OF ECUADOR CONCERNING THE ENCOURAGEMENT AND
RECIPROCAL PROTECTION OF INVESTMENT, SIGNED AUGUST 27, 1993
(THE "TREATY")

and

THE UNCITRAL ARBITRATION RULES 1976

- - - - -x
 In the Matter of Arbitration :
 Between: :
 :
 CHEVRON CORPORATION (U.S.A.), :
 TEXACO PETROLEUM COMPANY (U.S.A.), :
 :
 Claimants, : PCA Case No.
 : 2009-23
 and :
 :
 THE REPUBLIC OF ECUADOR, :
 :
 Respondent. :
 - - - - -x Volume 12

TRACK 2 HEARING

Thursday, May 7, 2015

The World Bank
700 18th Street, N.W.
J Building
Conference Room JB1-080
Washington, D.C. 20003

The hearing in the above-entitled matter convened
at 9:00 a.m. before:

- MR. V.V. VEEDER, Q.C., President
- DR. HORACIO GRIGERA NAÓN, Arbitrator
- PROFESSOR VAUGHAN LOWE, Q.C., Arbitrator

Registry, Permanent Court of Arbitration:

MR. MARTIN DOE, Secretary to the Tribunal

Additional Secretary:

MS. JESSICA WELLS

Court Reporters:

MR. DAVID A. KASDAN
Registered Diplomate Reporter (RDR)
Certified Realtime Reporter (CRR)
Worldwide Reporting, LLP
529 14th Street, S.E.
Washington, D.C. 20003
United States of America
(202) 544-1903
info@wreporting.com

SR. VIRGILIO DANTE RINALDI, S.H.
D.R. Esteno
Colombres 566
Buenos Aires 1218ABE
Argentina
(5411) 4957-0083
info@dresteno.com

Interpreters:

MR. DANIEL GIGLIO

MS. SILVIA COLLA

APPEARANCES: (Continued)

Representing Chevron Corporation and Texaco
Petroleum Company:

MR. HEWITT PATE

MR. MATTHEW FRIEDRICH

MR. JOSÉ LUIS MARTIN

MR. RICARDO REIS VEIGA

MS. SARA McMILLEN

MR. ANDRES ROMERO

MS. TANYA VALLI

APPEARANCES:

On behalf of the Claimants:

MR. R. DOAK BISHOP
MR. WADE CORIELL
MS. TRACIE RENFROE
MS. CAROL WOOD
MR. DAVID WEISS
MR. ELDY QUINTANILLA ROCHÉ
MS. ANISHA SUD
MS. SARA MCBREARTY
MS. JAMIE MILLER
MS. VIRGINIA CASTELAN
King & Spalding, LLP
110 Louisiana Street, Suite 3900
Houston, Texas 77002
United States of America

MR. EDWARD G. KEHOE
MS. CALINE MOUAWAD
MS. ISABEL FERNÁNDEZ de la CUESTA
MR. JOHN CALABRO
MS. JESSICA BEESS UND CHROSTIN
King & Spalding, LLP
1185 Avenue of the Americas
New York, New York 10036-4003
United States of America

MR. BRIAN A. WHITE
MS. ELIZABETH SILBERT
King & Spalding, LLP
1180 Peachtree Street
Atlanta, GA 30309
United States of America

MR. JAN PAULSSON
MR. LUKE A. SOBOTA
Three Crowns, LLP
2001 Pennsylvania Avenue, N.W.
Washington, D.C. 20005
United States of America

APPEARANCES: (Continued)

On behalf of the Respondent:

DR. DIEGO GARCÍA CARRIÓN,
Attorney General
DRA. BLANCA GÓMEZ del la TORRE
DR. FELIPE AGUILAR LUIS
DRA. DANIELA PALACIOS
DRA. MARÍA TERESA BORJA
Counsel, Attorney General's Office
Procuraduría General del Estado
Robles 731 y Av. Amazonas
Quito, Ecuador

MR. ERIC W. BLOOM
MR. TOMÁS LEONARD
MR. MARK BRAVIN
MS. NICOLE SILVER
MR. ALEX KAPLAN
MR. GREGORY EWING
MR. ERIC GOLDSTEIN
MS. CAROLINA ROMERO ACEVEDO
MS. CRISTINA VITERI TORRES
MS. CHRISTINE WARING
MR. JEFF JOHNSON
MR. ERIC WERLINGER
MR. PETER OSYF
MR. SCOTT PHILLIPS
MS. KATHY AMES VALDIVIESO
Winston & Strawn, LLP
1700 K Street, N.W.
Washington, D.C. 20006
United States of America

MR. RICARDO UGARTE
MS. NASSIM HOOSHMANDNIA
Winston & Strawn LLP
Grand-Rue 23
Geneva 1204
Switzerland

APPEARANCES: (Continued)

On behalf of the Respondent:

PROF. EDUARDO SILVA ROMERO
PROF. PIERRE MAYER
MR. JOSÉ MANUEL GARCÍA REPRESA
MS. AUDREY CAMINADES
MS. GABRIELA GONZÁLEZ GIRÁLDEZ
Dechert LLP
32 rue Monceau
75008 Paris
France

MR. ÁLVARO GALINDO CARDONA
MR. DAVID ATTANASIO
Dechert LLP
1900 K Street, N.W.
Washington, D.C. 20006
United States of America

MR. BRIAN CUMMINS
LitOptix

1 PROCEEDINGS
2 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Good morning, ladies and
3 gentlemen. We'll start Day 12 of this Hearing.
4 There are certainly a few housekeeping matters,
5 although we prefer to deal with them later rather than now,
6 but we await the agreed order that we discussed two days
7 ago as regards the nonconfidential status of the Expert
8 Reports.
9 And, secondly, the Tribunal's Secretary sent the
10 Parties a Draft Procedural Order 36 relating to the site
11 visit that we are very anxious to conclude, if we can,
12 today, so any comments back from you would be welcome at
13 the end of the lunch break, and then I hope we can put it
14 to bed.
15 Apart from that, are there any other housekeeping
16 matters? We ask the Claimants first.
17 MR. BISHOP: None from the Claimants.
18 PRESIDENT VEEDER: And the Respondent?
19 MR. BLOOM: Nor from the Respondent.
20 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you very much. We give
21 the floor to the Claimants for their closing oral
22 submissions. We'll take our usual breaks. We anticipate
23 finishing, I think as the Parties said, by 5:30 today.
24 MR. BISHOP: Yes, Thank you, Mr. President.
25 CLOSING ARGUMENT BY COUNSEL FOR CLAIMANTS

C O N T E N T S

CLOSING ARGUMENTS ON BEHALF OF THE CLAIMANTS:

By Mr. Bishop 2506
By Ms. Renfroe 2516
By Mr. Coriell 2525
By Mr. Weiss 2559
By Mr. Paulsson 2570
By Ms. Renfroe 2607
By Mr. Bishop 2634
By Ms. Mouawad 2651
By Ms. Silbert 2668
By Mr. Bishop 2680
By Mr. Kehoe 2708
By Mr. Paulsson 2735
By Mr. Pate 2753

08:59 1 MR. BISHOP: I'm going to try in the next 15
2 minutes to put the Lago Agrio Case into some perspective
3 and to give you a roadmap as to where our presentation will
4 go today.
5 The Lago Agrio Case was fatally defective at its
6 very inception. All diffuse environmental claims had
7 already been settled, TexPet had properly remediated its
8 share of the sites, and the government had approved that
9 remediation at every site. The case was filed against the
10 wrong party in Chevron, and the Plaintiffs had agreed not
11 to sue the Government or Petroecuador, so they tried to
12 ignore their responsibility.
13 Now, when Steven Donziger took over as lead
14 counsel in 2005 for the Lago Agrio Case, the case quickly
15 turned into an extortionate scheme involving an aggressive
16 public relations campaign, falsified data, the falsified
17 Expert Reports of Dr. Calmbacher, the bribery of Cabrera,
18 and the ghostwriting of his supposedly independent expert
19 reports, intimidation of judges, and the bribery of Judge
20 Zambrano, and the ghostwriting of both his Court Orders and
21 the Judgment.
22 In this process, the laws and the Constitution of
23 Ecuador were trampled. But what was lost even more was any
24 semblance of the truth, the objective facts, ethical
25 restraints in any sense of proportion in the case.

09:00 1 The Lago Agrio Plaintiffs' lawyers' descent into
 2 an ethical hell is rather astounding, but what's most
 3 shocking about this case has been the State's role in it.
 4 President Correa adopted the Plaintiffs' case as a national
 5 cause. He committed the Government to that case, and he
 6 began an aggressive campaign to influence the Court's
 7 decisions, and it's clear that successive judges were
 8 influenced as every judge after President Correa was
 9 elected made clearly biased decisions that denied due
 10 process to Chevron.
 11 When the \$18 billion Judgment was issued and the
 12 fraud and the corruption was revealed, the State, through
 13 both the Government and its courts, refused to stay the
 14 enforcement of the Judgment, despite that evidence and
 15 despite the Interim Awards of this Tribunal. The
 16 Government also refused to investigate Chevron's claims or
 17 to prosecute or punish any of the principals behind the
 18 scheme. And the appellate courts affirmed the Judgment and
 19 certified it as enforceable without ever reviewing or
 20 deciding the claims of fraud and corruption.
 21 And the Government has even adopted and
 22 aggressively promoted the enforcement of the Judgment as a
 23 matter of Government policy.
 24 Now, a commonsense view of the evidence, and even
 25 of the Judgment just on its face, indicates bias and the

09:03 1 key evidence in this case is undisputed. For example,
 2 Ecuador said in the Opening Statement, and I quote it: "To
 3 be clear, the Republic does not dispute the text from some
 4 of the Plaintiffs' documents appears in the Judgment as
 5 Claimants have identified."
 6 So, it's undisputed that the Plaintiffs' own
 7 internal documents are copied into the Judgment. And no
 8 one has found those documents that we pointed to anywhere
 9 in the Court Record.
 10 So, Ecuador goes further and also says in the
 11 Opening Statement, and I quote it again: "It's quite
 12 impossible under these circumstances for any person to know
 13 the universe of the lawfully submitted documents."
 14 The ghostwriting of the Judgment is clear; and, as
 15 a result, Ecuador is forced to resort to an opportunistic
 16 any port in the storm defense, that the Court record was
 17 kept by the Clerk in such a sloppy manner that no one could
 18 know what documents were filed or were not filed.
 19 But what's not clear about this is why Ecuador
 20 could possibly believe that's a defense. It would not be a
 21 defense at a \$9,000 case, and it's certainly not a defense
 22 in a \$9 billion case.
 23 Dr. Velasquez, a former judge on the Ecuadorian
 24 Constitutional Court, confirms in his Expert Reports that a
 25 Judgment cannot be based on documents not in the Court

09:02 1 ghostwriting of that judgment, and I refer you to Slide 3
 2 in that regard. \$18 billion in damages, despite
 3 Petroecuador's remediation for the same sites of
 4 \$70 million.
 5 \$8.5 billion in punitive damages in manifest
 6 violation of Ecuadorian law which doesn't permit or
 7 recognize punitive damages, and conditioned on an
 8 unprecedented public apology which would have effectively
 9 been an admission, and based on Chevron's attempts to
 10 defend itself in the face of pervasive fraud and
 11 corruption.
 12 The factual absurdities of the environmental
 13 findings and damages with no grounding in scientific
 14 evidence but based instead on the fraudulent Cabrera
 15 Reports and the legal absurdities of trying to justify
 16 suing the wrong party and ignoring Petroecuador's
 17 operations and impacts.
 18 Now, each of these, along with the Cabrera fraud
 19 and the bribery and ghostwriting of the Court Orders and
 20 the Judgment evidences a denial of justice and a breach of
 21 the Bilateral Investment Treaty.
 22 Now, much of Claimants' case rests on un rebutted
 23 evidence. For example, the concessions which Ecuador made
 24 in the Opening Statement which reflect generally what they
 25 had already said in their Memorials, demonstrates that the

09:05 1 Record. And Mr. Andrade confirmed that same principle in
 2 his testimony on Tuesday. A judgment based on unfiled
 3 documents is a nullity under Ecuadorian law.
 4 Now, in the Opening Statement, I told you that
 5 there were at least four central characters in the Lago
 6 Case, but you would only hear from one of them, and that's
 7 Mr. Guerra. And you've now had the opportunity to see and
 8 hear Mr. Guerra. And since you've seen his demeanor and
 9 you've heard his forthright answers, you can judge his
 10 credibility for yourself. But very importantly, his
 11 testimony is largely corroborated by independent and
 12 documentary evidence.
 13 By contrast, however, the Witness you didn't hear
 14 from is former Judge Zambrano. We challenged Ecuador to
 15 bring him, since he currently works for a company
 16 controlled by Petroecuador, the national oil company of
 17 Ecuador, and you invited him to appear. But Ecuador
 18 refused to bring him.
 19 So, we might ask why. Why isn't he here? Why
 20 didn't they bring him to testify in this case? Well,
 21 there's a simple answer to that question, and the answer is
 22 that his testimony in the RICO case was so dismal and so
 23 devastating and his demeanor so lacking in credibility that
 24 it was clear he didn't author the Judgment. So, he's not
 25 here.

09:06 1 Now it's unfortunate that you didn't get to see
 2 him and draw your own impressions from watching him
 3 testify, but fortunately, Judge Kaplan in the RICO case did
 4 get to see Zambrano in person and did get to hear from him,
 5 and he concluded that Zambrano was not a credible witness.
 6 And although his conclusion is not binding on you, it's the
 7 best evidence that you have as to the demeanor and
 8 credibility of Zambrano as a witness.
 9 Now, what is Ecuador's defense to this case?
 10 There seems to be no coherent defense on the facts of the
 11 case. Ecuador has not brought you a single fact witness in
 12 Track 2. Its primary defense seems to be exhaustion of
 13 local remedies, but with Ecuador's highest court, the
 14 National Court of Justice now having spoken, Ecuador
 15 struggles to find a way to preserve its now exhausted
 16 exhaustion defense. So, it casts about, and it points to a
 17 new and oblique vehicle: The Collusion Prosecution Act.
 18 But that doesn't work. The direct remedy for Chevron was
 19 appealed, and Chevron fully pursued its appeals.
 20 The Ecuadorian appellate courts had ample
 21 procedural vehicles under the Constitution to determine the
 22 claims of fraud and corruption that Chevron brought, but
 23 they ignored them.
 24 They also had ample evidence of the fraud already
 25 in the record before them--the Cabrera fraud, for

09:10 1 opportunity to see and hear from the Environmental Experts,
 2 and I think you've seen the gross exaggerations and
 3 distortions of Ecuador's case in this regard. And there
 4 are three simple points I'd like to make about it very
 5 quickly:
 6 First, at all relevant times, Petroecuador was
 7 always the majority and controlling partner of the
 8 Consortium, and the Government was both the regulator and
 9 the policy-maker who set the policies that was followed by
 10 the Consortium.
 11 Second, the Government agreed to a remediation
 12 program with TexPet at specific sites and with agreed
 13 criteria that was both effective and protective, and then
 14 it approved that remediation at every single site and fully
 15 released TexPet from all diffuse environmental liability.
 16 What was left was Petroecuador's responsibility.
 17 And, third, Petroecuador's own budget for the full
 18 remediation of the same sites is \$70 million, not
 19 \$8.5 billion.
 20 Now, finally in terms of remedies, the Claimants
 21 request a combination of declaratory, injunctive, and
 22 monetary relief in order to wipe out the consequences of
 23 the illegal acts of Ecuador. The most important of those
 24 remedies is declaratory relief, declaring that the Republic
 25 of Ecuador committed a denial of justice under customary

09:08 1 example--and the evidence that the Judgment copies from the
 2 Plaintiffs' internal documents that are nowhere filed in
 3 the Court Record. That evidence was before them. And they
 4 could have ruled on that basis, but instead they ignored
 5 that evidence as well. And the reason I think is clear:
 6 Donziger wanted the Government to make the Lago case into a
 7 national issue, so no judge could rule against them and get
 8 away with it in terms of his career, and he said that in so
 9 many words. And President Correa, once he was elected,
 10 accommodated exactly that and made the case into a national
 11 cause.
 12 Now, as to the Collusion Prosecution Act itself,
 13 it's not a direct remedy; and, very importantly, it cannot
 14 be used to enjoin or arrest the enforcement of the
 15 gargantuan \$9.5 billion judgment which would remain
 16 enforceable throughout the pendency of the case.
 17 In these unique circumstances in which Chevron is
 18 condemned by the President of Ecuador as an enemy of the
 19 country and its lawyers and experts are condemned as
 20 traitors to the country, justice for Chevron in Ecuador is
 21 futile, and the CPA provides no possible remedy.
 22 Now, Ecuador's other major theme in this case is
 23 environmental. Over the past three years, you've heard
 24 them describe what happened in Ecuador as an environmental
 25 disaster. But over the past two weeks you finally had an

09:11 1 international law and also breached the Bilateral
 2 Investment Treaty and several of its provisions, including
 3 the effective means provision.
 4 Now, in order to provide full relief as
 5 international law requires, Chevron needs a declaration of
 6 both denial of justice and a breach of the Treaty, and
 7 Mr. Kehoe will discuss this in much more detail this
 8 afternoon.
 9 Similarly, Chevron also requests the Declaration
 10 that the Judgment is nullity and therefore devoid of legal
 11 effect under international law.
 12 Now, I'd like to answer your first question.
 13 Throughout this presentation, various of the speakers will
 14 be answering your questions. We're going to try to answer
 15 each and every one of them.
 16 But as to your first question, the Claimants
 17 certainly have no objection to the Tribunal having the full
 18 legal materials that you need, including the full books of
 19 Professors Paulsson and Freeman and the full legal opinions
 20 in the Loewen Case, among others. We have no objection to
 21 that whatsoever.
 22 Now, we've divided our presentation today into
 23 seven segments. And, as I said, we've tried to weave the
 24 Tribunal's questions into these, and so we're going to
 25 answer those questions throughout, so the structure of our

<p>Sheet 6</p> <p style="text-align: right;">2515</p> <p>09:12 1 argument is going to be as follows: 2 First, I'm going to hand the floor to Tracie 3 Renfroe, who will address TexPet's remediation and the RAP. 4 Then Wade Coriell will address the remaining 5 Track 1 issues, including the settlement issues and 6 certainly the Tribunal's questions on veil piercing, 7 causation, and timing that relate to the Judgment itself. 8 Now, at that point, that might be a good 9 opportunity to take the mid-morning break. I think that 10 will take about an another hour and 15 minutes to get to 11 that point. 12 After that, we will then turn to the international 13 law issues for approximately an hour and a half. 14 David Weiss will address the jurisdictional and 15 admissibility issues and the relevance or irrelevance of 16 the environmental issues. 17 Professor Paulsson will then address the remaining 18 international law issues such as the treaty breaches, the 19 denial of justice, and the exhaustion of legal remedies. 20 That might be a good opportunity for a lunch 21 break. 22 Following that, we'll return to Tracie Renfroe, 23 who will answer the environmental case that Ecuador has put 24 forward. 25 Then we will turn to the facts of the fraud and</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">2517</p> <p>09:15 1 that under that Remedial Action Plan or RAP, the Parties 2 divided not only the sites within the Concession Area, but 3 within a given site they divided remediation 4 responsibilities with TexPet having responsibility only for 5 certain features at certain sites. And we've discussed 6 that issue in detail, and you will have heard no dispute 7 from any fact witness or any expert witness to that point. 8 Which then brings me to: What was done in this 9 Remedial Action Program? With the benefit of the jointly 10 commissioned HBT Agra audit, the Parties--meaning Ecuador, 11 Petroecuador, and TexPet--agreed on the details of exactly 12 what sort of remediation would be done and where. 13 And in this slide I've just excerpted a few of the 14 highlights of the nature of the types of things that were 15 to be addressed. 16 Contrary to what you may have heard earlier this 17 week from Ecuador's Expert LBG, it is not the case that the 18 remedial action work was limited to pits. If one simply 19 looks at the Remedial Action Plan, you will find that it 20 calls for remediation of soils and spills as well as 21 sediments in certain areas, including, in addition to the 22 pit remediation, plugging and abandonment of wells, et 23 cetera; and so it's simply factually incorrect to suggest 24 that this remediation program was limited to pits. 25 Now, the remediation program was conducted by</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">2516</p> <p>09:14 1 the corruption, and I will address that along with Caline 2 Mouawad and Elizabeth Silbert. 3 Following that in our sixth segment we'll turn to 4 the issue of remedies. Mr. Kehoe will primarily discuss 5 the remedies, followed by Jan Paulsson discussing the 6 offset theory. 7 And we will conclude with some final remarks from 8 Mr. Hew Pate, who I think will also attempt to answer some 9 of the Tribunal's questions with respect to the RICO 10 issues. 11 And with that, I'll turn the floor over to Tracie 12 Renfroe. 13 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you. 14 Ms. Renfroe. 15 MS. RENFROE: Thank you very much, Mr. President, 16 and good morning, Members of the Tribunal. 17 I would like to add some color and additional 18 detail to Mr. Bishop's comments about the fact that the 19 TexPet Remedial Action Program, or the RAP as we have 20 called it, was both effective and highly protective. 21 You may remember this slide that I showed you in 22 my opening remarks in which I set forth the division or 23 allocation of remediation responsibilities that the Parties 24 agreed to in 1995 in their Settlement Agreement and the 25 Remedial Action Plan. And the noteworthy point here is</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">2518</p> <p>09:17 1 Ecuadorian remediation Contractors under the oversight and 2 management of the Woodward-Clyde International 3 environmental engineering firm. You may recall having 4 heard in detail from Claimants' Expert engineer John Connor 5 how the remediation work was done; and, on this slide from 6 his presentation, you'll see the eight-step process that 7 was followed by the remediation for remediation of pits. 8 And you will find when you look at the volume, the 9 two-volume final report published by Woodward-Clyde 10 International in 2000, you will find a photographic log in 11 Volume 2 of this Report that shows you the photographs that 12 documented the remediation of all of these pits and 13 surrounding areas, including some streams. 14 And just as a reminder, the Woodward-Clyde Report 15 is in the record as Connor Exhibit 30. 16 Now, Mr. Connor also, in addition to explaining 17 how the remediation work would be done, he showed us the 18 results of it; and, if we look at this slide taken from his 19 presentation, you can see just one illustration of what a 20 pit looked like before it was remediated and then what it 21 looked like following application of the eight-step 22 remediation process. And as you can see for yourself, the 23 result of it is that the pit was--the contents of it were 24 treated and solidified, it was revegetated and essentially 25 retaken by the surrounding land area.</p>

09:18 1 We also heard from Mr. Connor's testimony about
 2 the effective nature of this type of remediation program.
 3 And it might be of interest to you to know that today, the
 4 Republic of Ecuador and Petroecuador actually use the same
 5 eight-step process for remediating pits in the Concession
 6 Area.
 7 Now, during the testimony of LBG earlier this
 8 week, I believe you may have heard the suggestion that
 9 streams and sediments were a problem in the Concession Area
 10 that LBG is now focused on, and the suggestion that TexPet
 11 addressed no sediment contamination. As I said a moment
 12 ago, that is simply not true. And in this photograph taken
 13 from the Woodward-Clyde Report and that can be found in the
 14 clickable database, I show you an example of a stream that
 15 TexPet actually remediated, and the stream is near the
 16 Sacha 89 well platform. You will find when you look in the
 17 Actas in this record that Hinchee 175 contains a copy of
 18 the October 1997 Acta confirming from the Republic of
 19 Ecuador's Ministry that the remediation work had been done
 20 and completed.
 21 And not only do we have the Acta confirming
 22 Ecuador's satisfaction with the remediation of this stream,
 23 but we also have this letter from members of the local
 24 community, this letter of appreciation to TexPet, thanking
 25 them for the grate--well, providing an observation of and

09:20 1 expressing their testimony of, "real gratefulness to TexPet
 2 Petroleum Company for the environmental remediation work
 3 performed on the creek which has its origin near well
 4 Sacha 89." You'll find that letter in C-1174.
 5 So, not only was TexPet's remediation of pits
 6 effective and protective, but we have the testimony of
 7 local members of the community who appreciated TexPet's
 8 remediation work of streams.
 9 And then again to remind you of the detailed
 10 documentation from the Government of Ecuador's own
 11 representatives who monitored this remediation program, and
 12 their work notes and their monitoring of the program were
 13 documented in these 52 what we called RAT Actas, and those
 14 are all in this record. And then ultimately, all of the
 15 remediated areas that required action by TexPet were
 16 approved in the 19 Approval Actas, which are also all in
 17 this record, and then all of that culminated in the Final
 18 Acta, the final remediation Acta issued September 1998 in
 19 which the senior Executives for both Petroecuador and the
 20 Ministries of Ecuador confirmed their satisfaction that
 21 TexPet had, indeed, completed all of the remediation
 22 obligations assigned to it.
 23 And as I said, the documentation of the oversight
 24 by Ecuador and Petroecuador's representatives is contained
 25 in these various Actas, all of which are in the record, and

09:22 1 which we have provided citation, but we're happy to provide
 2 them in a handy, convenient collection if that would be of
 3 convenience to the Tribunal.
 4 So, let me then move on to this issue, and that
 5 is, not only did we have the contemporaneous documented
 6 confirmation by Ecuador's representatives, but after the
 7 fact we've had further sworn testimony, as I mentioned in
 8 my Opening Statement, from high-level executives from the
 9 Republic of Ecuador's Ministries again confirming that
 10 TexPet, indeed, performed all of the remediation items that
 11 were assigned to it, but observing that Petroecuador had
 12 yet to do its part.
 13 And I wish to remind you again of the testimony of
 14 the Republic's Undersecretary of the Environmental
 15 Protection Division with the Ministry of Energy and Mines,
 16 Mr. Giovanni Rosanía Schiavone, whom you met in a hearing in
 17 November of 2012, and he told you under cross-examination
 18 he was brought by the Republic of Ecuador, and he told you
 19 under cross-examination that he insisted that the technical
 20 work, the environmental remediation work, had been done
 21 well.
 22 Now, one other important observation that we
 23 learned this week and to which there is no dispute from
 24 Ecuador's own environmental experts is the fact that the
 25 Parties' agreement, their agreed remediation criteria that

09:23 1 they set forth in the Remedial Action Plan called for the
 2 treatment and then encapsulation of materials that had been
 3 stored in pits. After treatment through that eight-step
 4 process, then the pits were closed and encapsulated, but
 5 the result is that there will be residues or there could
 6 be--there is not necessarily, but by agreement of the
 7 Parties there could be--residues of TPH left in these
 8 remediated closed pits. Dr. Garvey, or Mr. Garvey, and
 9 Mr. Goldstein from LBG acknowledged that and acknowledged
 10 that was the Agreement of the Parties. And so, to the
 11 extent that something untoward is suggested by Ecuador,
 12 something untoward about that, that we need only to look at
 13 the Parties' agreement and recognize that that was the
 14 anticipation and recognition.
 15 And then we move forward in time to two other
 16 points in which different representatives of Ecuadorian
 17 agencies investigated more than a decade later the
 18 efficacy--in some cases a decade later--the efficacy of
 19 TexPet's remediation work. And here on this slide, I
 20 simply summarize the key findings of one of these
 21 environmental investigators associated with one of
 22 Ecuador's agencies.
 23 And here, this environmental engineer, Dr. Narváez
 24 Troncoso and Dr. Bolívar García Pinos have concluded after
 25 investigating various remediation areas that TexPet had

09:25 1 addressed, they concluded that the hydrocarbon impact is
 2 confined to the area of the pits and does not affect
 3 underground water quality.
 4 Likewise, they concluded that the remediated pits
 5 had no impact on the quality of life or the wildlife. Nor
 6 were there any leaks or infiltrations into the subsoil or
 7 the bottom of the pits detected.
 8 And so, this is proof positive from
 9 representatives from the Republic of Ecuador themselves
 10 that the TexPet remediation work was both effective and
 11 protective of the environment.
 12 Similar findings were made by another
 13 investigator, another environmental engineer associated
 14 with Ecuador's Office of the Prosecutor; and in this Report
 15 in 2006, she reports, after having inspected the surface
 16 area of a number of the RAP-remediated pits, that, "of all
 17 the pits evaluated, 100 percent of them showed no surface
 18 environmental impacts that endanger human life, flora, or
 19 fauna." 100 percent of those that she inspected.
 20 Now, all this occurred before the Judgment was
 21 issued.
 22 Now, I come to my final point, and that is, not
 23 only do we have the official actions of the representatives
 24 of Ecuador in the various Actas that we have included in
 25 this record, confirming in the period of the remediation

09:26 1 work between 1995 and 1998, that the remediation was done
 2 pursuant to the Parties' Agreement, and then we see the
 3 subsequent testimony to that effect by the two senior
 4 environmental Ministers from Ecuador. And then we have the
 5 subsequent investigations by various branches of Ecuador's
 6 Ministries.
 7 But now we move forward in time to the Lago
 8 Litigation, where I have--where we find the observation of
 9 the Stratus Expert Doug Beltman on behalf of the Lago
 10 Plaintiffs. And on this slide at the top, I have excerpted
 11 again one of his private e-mail observations, where he's
 12 telling Steven Donziger: "I did not find any clear
 13 instances where TexPet did not meet the conditions required
 14 in the cleanup." From the observations of the Lago
 15 Plaintiffs' Environmental Expert himself.
 16 That same conclusion was also observed by
 17 Mr. Barros, one of the Court-appointed experts who said,
 18 "TexPet completed the part of the remediation assigned to
 19 it under the RAP." And again, you heard Mr. Connor last
 20 week tell you the very same thing in his testimony, that
 21 when he went to those sites during the judicial inspection
 22 process, he too confirmed the RAP remediated areas had been
 23 perfectly and faithfully remediated pursuant to the
 24 remediation plan.
 25 And then finally this week, Mr. Goldstein from

09:28 1 LBG, from actually quoting from his prior deposition, he
 2 said he believed they complied with the RAP, that TexPet
 3 complied with the RAP.
 4 So, Members of the Tribunal, it is simply
 5 uncontroverted from any fact or expert witness that TexPet
 6 fully complied with the RAP and performed its obligations
 7 to remediate, and it did it well, its work was effective,
 8 it was protective, and it fully deserved the release that
 9 it got from the Republic of Ecuador.
 10 And so, with that, I will now turn it over to
 11 Mr. Coriell.
 12 (Tribunal conferring.)
 13 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Mr. Coriell.
 14 MR. CORIELL: Thank you, Mr. President, Members of
 15 the Tribunal.
 16 You've heard about the effective remediation that
 17 TexPet performed, and I'll now be discussing Ecuador's
 18 liability for its legally absurd refusal to give effect to
 19 the Settlement and Release Agreements that TexPet signed on
 20 behalf of itself and its affiliates in exchange for doing
 21 that RAP work that Ms. Renfro discussed.
 22 And you will recall that this falls into three
 23 different and independent legal categories, Ecuador's
 24 remaining Track 1 liability. The first, of course, is
 25 breach of the Settlement and Release Agreements which you

09:30 1 have jurisdiction to hear under Ecuadorian law under
 2 Article VI(1)(a) of the BIT.
 3 The second is, of course, denial of justice for
 4 the legal absurdity inherent in the Judgment's failure to
 5 account for the Settlement and Release Agreements and its
 6 reasoning with respect to those.
 7 And the third is, of course, the treaty breaches,
 8 in particular the effective means provision and the
 9 fair-and-equitable-treatment provision because of the
 10 legitimate expectation of finality that TexPet and Chevron
 11 derived from these Release Agreements.
 12 And then I'm going to answer a couple of your
 13 questions about causation and piercing of the corporate
 14 veil.
 15 Now, when we submit our final brief on the Track 1
 16 issues, we're going to walk you through Ecuador's changing
 17 and inconsistent position on the nature of the rights that
 18 were purportedly vindicated in the Lago Agrio Judgment.
 19 You may remember how in 2010, Ecuador spoke to you during
 20 our very first Interim Measures Hearing as if Chevron made
 21 up the entire concept of a diffuse right; how in 2012,
 22 Ecuador and its experts treated diffuse and collective
 23 rights as synonyms in the context of this case. Or how
 24 after your Track 1 Award they suddenly pivoted and said
 25 somehow "collective" actually means "individual." That was

09:32 1 the theme at last April's Track 1b Hearing.
 2 Just two weeks ago we heard for the first time
 3 that the Lago Agrio Case isn't about actual harm at all.
 4 It's wholly about contingent harm. But what I want to
 5 focus on today is the narrow issue of what you have left to
 6 decide on Track 1 and how Ecuador is liable for a breach of
 7 the Settlement and Release Agreements. And so, I'd like to
 8 start with your two key holdings from the final Track 1
 9 Award.
 10 First, at Paragraph 106, at the time when the 1995
 11 Agreement was executed, only Ecuador could bring a diffuse
 12 claim under Article 19.2 of the Ecuadorian Constitution to
 13 safeguard the right of its citizens to live in an
 14 environment free from contamination. Only the State could
 15 represent that diffuse right.
 16 Second, Paragraph 112 of your First Partial Award:
 17 The '95 and '98 agreements have legal effect under
 18 Ecuadorian law precluding any diffuse claim under 19.2 by
 19 any individual not claiming personal harm, actual or
 20 threatened. The State settled that diffuse right that you
 21 held that it could represent.
 22 So, all that's left are individual allegations of,
 23 in your words--and I discussed this with you during my
 24 opening--personal harm. And you explained in your Track 1B
 25 Decision the basis for that key distinction that you made

09:35 1 And before your Track 1 Award forced them to
 2 change tune, their comparative law expert agreed with you
 3 as well. We see Mr. Chatelier's joint report with
 4 Professor Oquendo back in August of 2012, defining diffuse
 5 rights as indivisible entitlements that pertain to the
 6 community as a whole, such as the community's collective
 7 right to live in a healthy and uncontaminated environment,
 8 in other words, such as Article 19.2 of the Ecuadorian
 9 Constitution. Again, indivisible interests, community as a
 10 whole. So, you didn't get confused by civil law concepts,
 11 as Ecuador implied during its opening presentation two
 12 weeks ago. You got this right, this key distinction.
 13 So, where does that leave us? With a single
 14 remaining Track 1 liability issue: Was the Lago Agrio
 15 Judgment diffuse or did it vindicate individual claims for
 16 personal harm, whether actual or threatened?
 17 And in our Opening Argument, I showed you how the
 18 Plaintiffs, how Ecuador up until your Track 1 Award, and
 19 how every Ecuadorian Court in the Lago Agrio Case has
 20 answered this question diffuse: No claims for personal
 21 harm. And you have that handout of admissions that walks
 22 you through all of that, and so I'm not going to go to
 23 those provisions again.
 24 And in Ecuador's opening, it agreed with us. You
 25 see it from the Day 1 Transcript: The Lago Agrio Case does

09:33 1 between diffuse and individual rights. You did it at
 2 Paragraphs 155 and 156 of that decision. You said that
 3 under Ecuadorian law, an individual claim belongs to that
 4 individual with the remedy personal to that individual.
 5 It's not a diffuse claim. A diffuse claim may belong to a
 6 community of indeterminate people with the remedy
 7 indivisible, and it is not an individual claim. So,
 8 indeterminate people, indivisible interests. These are the
 9 characteristics make that distinction.
 10 Now, you may recall in its opening when Ecuador
 11 showed you these two paragraphs from your decision, warned
 12 you that you got it wrong in your Track 1B Decision, and
 13 told you that there was no source for this distinction that
 14 you made in Ecuadorian law. But you didn't get it wrong.
 15 Ecuador's own expert Dr. Eguiguren has agreed with you.
 16 Back in his Report in 2012, and he cited you to the source
 17 in Ecuadorian law, which is the definition of a diffuse
 18 interest in the 1999 Environmental Management Act. Let's
 19 take a look. This is Footnote 14 from his declaration:
 20 "Diffuse interest shall mean the homogeneous and
 21 indivisible interests, whose holders are undetermined
 22 groups of individuals linked by common circumstances." So,
 23 just as you said, undetermined people, indivisible
 24 interests. Ecuador can try to pretend otherwise now, but
 25 this is its law.

09:36 1 not seek to address personal injury claims or health harms
 2 specific to any one person. It didn't award damages based
 3 on past or existing injury to any specific person or
 4 persons.
 5 And not that it would change the result either
 6 way, but the health Expert that Ecuador hired and brought
 7 before you to defend this Judgment after the fact didn't
 8 even consider--wasn't asked to consider--the question of,
 9 in your words, "personal harm." She was asked if the risk
 10 assessments prove actual particular harm to a particular
 11 person, and Dr. Strauss said no, they do not. "Does that
 12 mean that you found that specific persons have been harmed
 13 by TexPet?
 14 No, I did not mean to imply any specific person
 15 was harmed. I looked at no specific person. I did not
 16 evaluate individual harms in the least."
 17 And then we have Ecuador again in its Opening
 18 Statement: The Aguinda Plaintiffs dropped their personal
 19 injury claims. Indeed, they did. Those personal injury
 20 claims refer to their cow claims, their claims for
 21 reparation or compensation for their individualized harm.
 22 Discrete, past harm. Personal harm. The key to the
 23 distinction that you made, that would be a 2214 type
 24 action, referring to Article 2214 in Ecuador's Civil Code.
 25 So, what Ecuador is telling you now is that this

<p>Sheet 10</p> <p style="text-align: right;">2531</p> <p>09:38 1 is not a case of actual existing personal harm, which 2 leaves them with one remaining possibility other than a 3 diffuse case, and that's contingent individual harm under 4 Article 2236, and this is the argument that Ecuador made in 5 its opening presentation, its last remaining Track 1 6 argument. 7 But the Lago Agrio Judgment, in fact, used 8 Article 2236 in a wholly diffuse way, and Ecuador had 9 already released the diffuse use of that cause of action 10 back in 1995 and 1998, and that's what I'd like to turn to 11 now. 12 Now, in Article 5.1 of the 1995 Settlement 13 Agreement, Ecuador released claims for a defined term under 14 the Contract: Environmental impact. And those claims fall 15 into two buckets which I've tried to illustrate 16 conceptually on Slide 32, both of which are diffuse by 17 definition, and that's a key point. The first bucket is 18 harm to the environment, and that's the diffuse interest at 19 Article 19.2 of the Constitution that you identified in 20 your Track 1 Award; and the second is health impacts on 21 indeterminate persons. 22 And the source for these two buckets of released 23 diffuse claims is the Settlement Agreement itself, as it 24 would have to be, and in particular Article 1.3 which 25 defines the environmental impacts that were released under</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">2533</p> <p>09:41 1 the future, directly or indirectly arising out of 2 operations of the Consortium, including but not limited to 3 consequences of all types of injury. And then it says in 4 all other types of injuries and it lists some, including 5 nuisance. You will recall your Track 1B Decisions, 6 nuisance analogy, strict liability, any other theory or 7 potential theory of recovery. So substantively, what's 8 being released here is in any way related to contamination. 9 That's as broad as this could be. And when you read it 10 with the definition of environmental impact and those two 11 diffuse categories of claims that are being released, you 12 see that the State is acting in a representative capacity. 13 So, it's any statutory cause of action "related to 14 contamination" as long as it's diffuse and, thus, able to 15 be represented by the State. That's the key: As long as 16 it's diffuse and thus, able to be represented by the State. 17 And that's what you'll recall I started with this, that's 18 what you held at Paragraph 106 of your final Track 1 Award 19 was the case with Article 19.2 of the Constitution. 20 So, let's look now at another such cause of 21 action, and it's the one that Ecuador is now hanging its 22 hat on, Article 2236. And we see the terms of it. As a 23 general rule, a popular-action lawsuit, and that's what 24 2236 is, it's a popular action--is permissible in all cases 25 of future damage that, due to a party's imprudence or</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">2532</p> <p>09:39 1 that Agreement. An environmental impact is any substance 2 present or released into the environment in such 3 concentration or condition, the presence or release of 4 which causes, or has the potential to cause harm to two 5 things: Number 1, human health; Number 2, the environment. 6 So, let's think about this for a minute. The 7 State is releasing claims for harm to human health or harm 8 to the environment. The State can't have an individual 9 right in human health. The State can't have an individual 10 right in the environment. So, the only way for it to be 11 releasing claims based on these two substantive categories 12 is if it is doing so in a representative capacity, if it is 13 releasing diffuse claims. That's why with this definition 14 of what is being released in the Settlement Agreement is so 15 important to the Track 1 issues. 16 Any claim alleging harm to those two diffuse 17 interests identified in Article 1.3 is released by this 18 Agreement. The particular cause of action under which that 19 substantive claim is bought is irrelevant, and we can see 20 that in Article 5.2, where the Government and Petroecuador 21 said they intend claims to mean any and all claims, common, 22 civil law, equitable, Contract, tort, constitutional, like 23 19.2, statutory, like 2236--and here is the key part, and 24 it's highlighted in the middle of the screen. In any way 25 related to contamination, that have or ever may arise in</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">2534</p> <p>09:43 1 negligence, threaten undetermined persons. And we can stop 2 there. Because Ecuador and the Claimants and the 3 Ecuadorian courts all agree that the Lago Agrio Plaintiffs 4 purported to represent a group of some 30,000 undetermined 5 persons. It's not in dispute that it is the undetermined 6 persons prong of this Civil Code article that's being used 7 in the Lago Agrio Judgment. 8 And remember the definition of "diffuse interests" 9 that Dr. Eguiguren referred to, that you referred to, 10 that's in the 1999 Law, remember that that definition 11 refers to those interests that are held by undetermined 12 persons. That's the key link, the definition of diffuse 13 interests in the EMA to this prong of Article 2236 that is 14 undisputedly the one purportedly vindicated in the Lago 15 Agrio Judgment. 16 So, Article 2236 can be used in a diffuse way. 17 That's what we know from this terminology read with that 18 definition. And it could also be used by the State as 19 representatives of those undetermined persons, and we know 20 that from the testimony of Dr. Eguiguren back in November 21 of 2012. He was asked: Under Ecuadorian law in 1995, you 22 would agree that the Government had standing under 23 Article 19.2 to seek reparation for environmental damage 24 from any party? And he said, I think that, as a public 25 action, it could have done it. The protected legal right</p>

09:44 1 is the right to the healthy environment, to live in a
 2 healthy environment.
 3 Public action means Article 2236 as the cause of
 4 action, the mechanism. And the substantive right is
 5 Article 19.2, the right to the healthy environment.
 6 And for the avoidance of any doubt, he went on to
 7 specify that he was talking about Article 2236. This is
 8 his follow-up answer. He's still talking about the State.
 9 And he says: It could have initiated a legal action
 10 seeking the reparation of an environmental damage. The
 11 State in 1995: It could have followed Article 2236. And
 12 that's determinative of Ecuador's one remaining argument,
 13 and the one remaining Track 1 liability issue that you have
 14 to decide.
 15 It comes down really to four steps: The first is
 16 that the State released all diffuse claims that it could
 17 assert for environmental impact defined in the Agreement in
 18 1995.
 19 Number 2, the State could assert diffuse claims
 20 under Article 2236 in 1995. It makes sense conceptually,
 21 and Dr. Eguiguren confirmed it.
 22 Number 3, the Lago Agrio Judgment was purportedly
 23 a diffuse Article 2236 claim--Ecuador agrees with
 24 that--therefore, Number 4, the Lago Agrio Judgment was
 25 barred by the Releases.

09:46 1 And there is nothing unusual about that: Despite
 2 Ecuador's claims to the contrary, representatives may
 3 settle diffuse Article 2236 claims. They can bind the
 4 community if they're acting properly in their
 5 representative capacity. We can see this from a quotation
 6 and citation in the Cassation Decision itself.
 7 This is from Professor Guidi. He is being cited
 8 in the Cassation Decision, Exhibit C-1975 at 185, and he
 9 says: A popular-action lawsuit--that's like 2236--a
 10 popular-action lawsuit is a lawsuit filed by one
 11 representative in defense of a collectively considered
 12 right, whose immutability and the authority of the Judgment
 13 will impact a group of people, res judicata. In a
 14 popular-action lawsuit, the rights of the group are
 15 represented in Court by a representative, and the Judgment
 16 will be with respect to the entire collective dispute,
 17 reaching the members of the right of the group.
 18 And consistent with this principle, you've already
 19 held at Paragraph 107 of your Track 1 Award that
 20 representatives may settle diffuse claims, and you've
 21 talked about how the Ecuadorian State did so in one
 22 instance. You said: It is not juridically possible for a
 23 person to exercise a right which no longer exists. And I
 24 want you to remember that term "juridically possible"
 25 because as you'll recall it's a denial-of-justice standard,

09:48 1 as Professor Paulsson explained during in his opening
 2 presentation.
 3 You went on: "As agreed by the Parties' Experts,
 4 that diffuse right under Article 19.2 was indivisible,
 5 either settled in full or not at all. The Tribunal rejects
 6 entirely the possibility that the same diffuse right in
 7 Article 19.2 can exist in separate parts to be exercised by
 8 multiple Claimants at different times with successive
 9 diffuse claims, thereby making any effective final
 10 settlement or adjudication of such claims illusory." You
 11 rejected that possibility because we had a contractual
 12 right and a legitimate expectation not to have that happen.
 13 The Lago Agrio Judgment embraced that possibility.
 14 And contrary to Mr. Leonard's concern during his
 15 opening, the Romans wouldn't be surprised about this
 16 either, and you can look at the source for that in
 17 Professor Oquendo's Second Report in 2012, where he said
 18 the actions under analysis derive--and Ecuador said
 19 this--from Roman law, which explicitly recognized the erga
 20 omnes preclusion effect of these suits. And then he cites
 21 to where it does that, Title 23 of Book 47 of the Justinian
 22 Code, which deals with popular actions, that's like 2236,
 23 unequivocally proclaims: "If an action is repeatedly
 24 brought on the same cause and on the same fact, the
 25 ordinary exception of res judicata may be raised." In

09:49 1 other words, preclusion applies upon repetition of the
 2 suit, independently of who acts as Plaintiff" independently
 3 of the representative.
 4 So, this is basic stuff, and it's been true for at
 5 least 1500 years in the civil law.
 6 So, Ecuador can't escape the Releases just by
 7 pointing you to Article 2236 and saying there was a
 8 carve-out for this from the Settlement Agreement. Nor does
 9 the so-called "five Texaco Experts" or Bustamante Affidavit
 10 that they like to point to, support Ecuador's position.
 11 This is the Affidavit from the proceedings before
 12 Judge Sand in New York in 2005 that you heard referenced
 13 again a couple weeks ago.
 14 And my colleague earlier handed out a packet with
 15 four documents for you. I will be mentioning each of them.
 16 This is behind Tab 4 and it's the entire text of the
 17 Affidavit. I'm not going to walk you through it right now,
 18 but I have pulled out the sort of two key pullouts on
 19 Slide 41. The second one is the language Ecuador always
 20 likes to point you to, the reference to Article 2236, and
 21 these Experts' opinion that the possibility of bringing
 22 those claims is not affected. But what I would like you to
 23 look at, you see that that's labeled (b), I would like you
 24 to look up at the question that they're being asked,
 25 Question 4(b): Does a settlement between the State and

09:51 1 TexPet affect the ability of individuals to bring claims
 2 against Petroecuador for preventive purposes under
 3 Article 2236? That's what they're responding to. They're
 4 saying it doesn't affect the ability to make these
 5 Petroecuador claims. So, this language can't carry the
 6 weight that Ecuador wants it to carry with you, especially
 7 in light of what I have just walked through, showing the
 8 clear release of diffuse Article 2236 claims in the
 9 Settlement Agreement.
 10 So, please do take a look at the entire Affidavit,
 11 and I will point you in particular to around the middle of
 12 Page 2 of the Affidavit where these Experts talk about the
 13 use of Article 2236 to vindicate what they call collective
 14 or, indeed, diffuse rights. You've heard a lot. You heard
 15 it again two weeks ago about how the term "diffuse rights"
 16 only came up for the first time in this dispute during this
 17 arbitration in 2009 or 2010. These Experts that they like
 18 to point you to were talking about them, and talking about
 19 them in terms of Article 2236's use back in 2005.
 20 Although--and we've discussed this
 21 before--although the Cassation Decision disagreed with
 22 Dr. Eguiguren and although it disagreed with your final
 23 Track 1 Award on the question whether the State could
 24 represent diffuse rights in 1995, I do want to give you
 25 comfort on the remaining Track 1 liability issue that you

09:52 1 still have left to decide because, on that one, the
 2 Cassation Decision is clear. It treats the Lago Agrio
 3 Judgment as wholly diffuse.
 4 Now, on Tuesday morning you may recall I walked
 5 Dr. Andrade through the section of the Cassation Decision
 6 or portions of the Cassation Decision that rejected
 7 Chevron's improper joinder argument, and the reason that
 8 the Cassation Decision did so--and I'm going to show you
 9 the key passages in a moment, but the reason that the
 10 Cassation Decision rejected the argument that the Civil
 11 Code and the environmental claims were improperly joined,
 12 is based on the fact that the Claims decided in the
 13 Judgment were wholly diffuse, no matter the vehicle, they
 14 were wholly diffuse environmental claims. The reason it
 15 rejected our improper joinder defense is because these are
 16 wholly diffuse claims.
 17 So, let's start at Pages 200 and 201 of the
 18 Decision, where the Court says "diffuse interests have to
 19 be considered as general interests, interests held by all
 20 members of a collective, the object of which consists of
 21 goods of general or collective importance." Again, that
 22 sounds a lot like the distinction that you made between
 23 diffuse and individual claims.
 24 And I asked Dr. Andrade if he understood the Court
 25 to be saying that the interest being vindicated

09:54 1 substantively in the Lago Agrio Case is a general interest,
 2 a diffuse interest in a clean environment, that's
 3 Article 19.2, and he said yes, in part. So, Ecuador is
 4 admitting that the Judgment at least in part vindicates
 5 diffuse rights that we know it can't legitimately and
 6 legally vindicate because of the Settlement and Release
 7 Agreements.
 8 These are otherwise known, by the way, to go back
 9 to the EMA glossary of definitions, as "environmental
 10 collective rights" in Ecuadorian law, and you see this
 11 again, Dr. Eguiguren citing to that term and its definition
 12 as those rights shared by the community to enjoy a healthy
 13 and pollution-free environment; in other words,
 14 Article 19.2, it's an environmental collective right.
 15 So, this is saying diffuse is the same as
 16 collective when we're talking about these group rights to
 17 public health and to a pollution-free environment. You see
 18 again those two substantive buckets of rights I was talking
 19 about: Healthy and pollution-free.
 20 And Dr. Andrade agrees with the Cassation Decision
 21 that the Lago Agrio Case is a collective action for
 22 environmental harm, which is distinct--again, to go back to
 23 that distinction that you made in your Track 1B Decision
 24 that's troubling Ecuador--it's distinct from an individual
 25 action. So, your understanding, he was asked, of what it's

09:55 1 saying is that the Civil Code does not just contemplate
 2 individual actions, it also contemplates collective actions
 3 for environmental harm, like the Lago Agrio Case. And he
 4 said yes, that is correct.
 5 So, collective or diffuse, even if it's a Civil
 6 Code cause of action, it's vindicating the same collective
 7 or diffuse substantive right, and these are not, as a
 8 result, individual Civil Code claims.
 9 The Cassation Decision goes on. The complaint was
 10 filed by a collective. When a case involves damage to the
 11 environment, it is always a collective that will be harmed,
 12 so the EMA itself contemplates group actions in order to
 13 enforce the Claims of a given group and achieve the
 14 corresponding remedies and exercise the fundamental
 15 right--and here is that reference to Article 19.2
 16 again--that diffuse right to live in a healthy environment.
 17 And then Dr. Andrade confirms three things for us:
 18 One, when there is environmental harm it's always a
 19 collective that's harmed; two, the EMA contemplates group
 20 actions; and, three, the purpose of them is to enforce the
 21 Claims of a given group. So, what the Court is saying
 22 through this analysis is that it's okay to join the Lago
 23 Agrio Plaintiffs' Civil Code claims with their
 24 environmental claims because the substance of all of those
 25 claims is a collective right, a group right, a diffuse

<p>Sheet 13</p> <p style="text-align: right;">2543</p> <p>09:57 1 right. That's the reason it's not an improper joinder, 2 according to the Cassation Court. 3 And then the Cassation Decision explicitly says 4 these Civil Code claims are not being used here as 5 individual claims. They're being used to make diffuse 6 claims. And you have that at Page 203. It is mistaken to 7 state that Article 2214 only contemplates individual 8 actions, considering that this title provides for a 9 popular-action lawsuit in all cases of contingent damage in 10 which indeterminate persons are threatened, indeterminate 11 persons. Again, the characteristic of diffuse right. So, 12 the appellant cannot try to confuse the Court by arguing 13 that the current Article 2214 only applies to individual 14 claims. Again, that's why the National Court of Justice 15 says that there was no improper joinder because the entire 16 Judgment vindicated only diffuse or collective claims under 17 the right to human health, the right to live in an 18 environment, and that's why it was appropriate, according 19 to the Court to be heard under Article 43 of the EMA in a 20 summary verbal proceeding. 21 And finally--and this is the last one--the 22 Cassation Decision cites to comparative law from Colombia 23 in Footnote 221 to show how the popular action--again, 24 Article 2236 in Ecuador--is being used here solely in a 25 diffuse way. You see the reference: Popular-action</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">2545</p> <p>10:00 1 Article 2236 of the Ecuadorian Civil Code. 2 Go down to the Cassation Decision. That is how 3 both the EMA and Article 2236, which were allegedly not 4 improperly joined in the case. According to the Cassation 5 Decision, that's how both of them were interpreted as being 6 used in the Lago Agrio Judgment, in a wholly diffuse way, 7 to protect--and we are back to those two key substantive 8 buckets: The people's public health and the people's right 9 to live in a clean environment. 10 So then we go to the Settlement Agreement, and 11 that's exactly what we started with. That's exactly what 12 the Settlement Agreement released with respect to that key 13 defined term "environmental impact." Cases of actual or 14 contingent harm to public health or to the environment. 15 What else could have been being released by that term 16 "environmental impact" when you're talking about potential 17 or actual harm to public health or to the environment, 18 other than the community's diffuse claims based on alleged 19 harm in each of those categories? 20 So, the Releases bar the Lago Agrio Judgment, but 21 I would like to take a step back. And I want to go back to 22 the conversation with which I ended my discussion with 23 Dr. Andrade on Tuesday. You'll recall it was about the 24 State's duty under Article 397 of the Ecuadorian 25 Constitution. Under that provision as he says here from</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">2544</p> <p>09:58 1 lawsuits are mechanisms instituted by the legal system to 2 defend collective interests. And then it lists some types 3 of collective interests involving public property, space, 4 safety, health, moral administration, the environment, 5 competitive markets and other similar rights and interests. 6 All of these--all of these--are group rights that have to 7 be vindicated by representatives, not individual rights, 8 not relating to personal harm, in your terminology. 9 And then at the bottom, it goes on, popular-action 10 lawsuits as a collective remedy in response to public 11 injuries and damage as a right afforded to the community to 12 defend itself. In a public-action suit, any person 13 belonging to a group in the community has standing to 14 defend the group harmed. Collective remedy, public injury, 15 community right, individual standing to defend that 16 community right, no personal harm, so we're talking about 17 something that's wholly diffuse, and this is the Cassation 18 Decision analyzing the use of Article 2236 in the Judgment 19 and comparing it to a Colombian provision that's similar. 20 Now, this final slide on this issue, Slide 51, I 21 hope puts all of the pieces together as far as why the Lago 22 Agrio Judgment is wholly barred by the Settlement and 23 Release Agreements. You see at the top, the EMA. It 24 protects diffuse interests which are held by indeterminate 25 groups. And then you go clockwise, and you see, so does</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">2546</p> <p>10:01 1 the Transcript: The State has to act immediately--it's a 2 constitutional duty to act immediately and to repair in any 3 case where it sees environmental harm. 4 And he was asked: In addition to whatever 5 sanction there is for environmental harm, the State then 6 shall seek restitution from the Operator that it thinks 7 caused that harm. And he said: That's correct, yes. 8 So, what that does is it creates a right, the 9 right to receive compensation for whatever the State had to 10 invest in fulfilling that duty, and again he said yes. 11 And we walked through a hypothetical about this, 12 but the obvious implication is, if the State saw harm in 13 the former Concession Area, it was required to fix that 14 harm, and then it could sue the Operator that it thought 15 caused that harm. 16 But we know that it couldn't sue TexPet, and we 17 know that it couldn't sue Chevron--both sides at least 18 agree on that because of the Releases. 19 So think about what this illustrates. They 20 released us in 1995 and 1998 for claims for environmental 21 impact, and I've walked through what that means. In 22 exchange, we cleaned up our percentage interest in the 23 Consortium, and Ms. Renfroe walked you through that 24 process. They're supposed to clean up the rest. Why? 25 Because, as Dr. Andrade said, as the Constitution says,</p>

10:03 1 it's a constitutional requirement, immediately.
 2 Then--then--they have the right to sue the
 3 allegedly responsible party, exactly like they've sued
 4 Burlington, exactly like they've sued Perenco.
 5 And please don't forget, as the State sits here
 6 before you today saying that it could not settle diffuse
 7 claims, it is seeking billions of dollars from those two
 8 companies for the same diffuse environmental torts that are
 9 the subject of the Lago Agrio Judgment, just in a different
 10 area, a different geographical area.
 11 But because of the Releases, Ecuador can't sue
 12 Chevron, so the Lago Agrio Plaintiffs sued Chevron for the
 13 same alleged environmental impacts to vindicate the
 14 community's right to public health and to live in a clean
 15 environment.
 16 And what this illustrates is that this whole
 17 entire process has become a shell game and it's not
 18 permitted by the 1995 and 1998 Releases.
 19 So, with respect, we believe that revolves the
 20 remaining Track 1 liability issue. The Judgment is barred
 21 by the Releases.
 22 Second, Ecuador breached the Settlement and
 23 Release Agreements. This relates to the first of the three
 24 different legal buckets. You've got a denial of justice
 25 for ignoring the Releases, you've got a treaty breach for

10:05 1 ignoring our legitimate expectation of finality, but you've
 2 also got a breach of the Settlement and Release Agreements.
 3 Now, you recall that we've briefed the various breaches,
 4 and we'll outline them again in our Post-Hearing Brief.
 5 Last April, Ms. Mouawad walked you through each one, and I
 6 have put her slide packet from that presentation from the
 7 Track 1B opening last year in with all the key evidentiary
 8 references in it at Tab 1 of the handout that you received
 9 this morning, and I do encourage you as you deliberate to
 10 review that slide packet because there is overwhelming
 11 evidence of breach.
 12 For now, I want to touch on a couple of the more
 13 egregious breaches of the agreements, but before I do that,
 14 Professor Lowe had asked during the opening about the
 15 relationship between the Track 1B Decision, the complaint
 16 and the Judgment. And while we certainly maintain our
 17 view, and we believe that it's supported if you look
 18 through the handout that I gave you on opening of the
 19 various statements and characterizations about the
 20 complaint, while we maintain our view that the complaint
 21 brought exclusively diffuse claims, it ultimately doesn't
 22 matter because, as I think we have shown, the Judgment
 23 vindicated exclusively diffuse claims, so the Judgment is
 24 barred as res judicata, whether the complaint in whole or
 25 in part was barred as res judicata or not.

10:06 1 Now, what the decision about the complaint might
 2 do is it might have an effect on the date at which you find
 3 that a breach of the Settlement and Release Agreements
 4 occur. Now, we argue that there were various breaches of
 5 the agreements, regardless of what the complaint said,
 6 beginning with the filing of the case, extending through
 7 the criminal investigations and the criminal proceedings
 8 that took place before the Judgment was issued; the
 9 Government's collusion with the Plaintiffs up to and beyond
 10 the Judgment itself. But at the very least--at the very
 11 least--we know that there was a breach as of the
 12 enforceability date of the Judgment itself.
 13 So, that said, I would like to walk you through
 14 some of the key breaches that, in fact, occurred much
 15 earlier than that, even consistent with your Track 1B
 16 Decision.
 17 But, first, Ecuador's obligation, just to sort of
 18 go back to the context, Ecuador's obligation, which is to
 19 perform the Releases in good faith. You see the references
 20 on the screen: This is a substantive duty under the civil
 21 law, to do whatever is necessary to implement the
 22 objectives of the Contract. They didn't just have some
 23 sort of negative obligation. They had a positive
 24 good-faith obligation to do whatever was necessary to
 25 implement the objectives.

10:07 1 So with these releases, what does that mean as a
 2 practical matter? Well, it means a few things--to uphold
 3 them and implement their objectives and not to undermine
 4 them. So, for example, Ecuador can't release Chevron and
 5 then impose liability through its Judgment for claims that
 6 Ecuador extinguished. It can't help the community sue,
 7 pressure Chevron, enforce the Judgment against Chevron for
 8 the Released claims. It can't frustrate the Releases by
 9 seeking creative ways to undermine them or nullify them.
 10 That is inconsistent with them on their own terms and it's
 11 inconsistent with that good-faith obligation.
 12 And what it is is what it comes down to is it's an
 13 obligation of result. Ecuador can't try but fail to
 14 release, acquit and forever discharge--those are the terms
 15 from the Agreement--Claimants from claims for diffuse
 16 environmental impact. That's the ultimate obligation.
 17 And when the Lago Agrio Plaintiffs filed their
 18 case, Chevron requested way back in October 2003 that
 19 Ecuador honor its obligations under these releases. You
 20 see it on Slide 57 in the letter from Chevron to Ecuador's
 21 Minister of Energy and Mines. It asked Chevron to notify
 22 the Court that, pursuant to the Releases, Chevron, Texaco,
 23 TexPet are not liable for environmental damage or for the
 24 remediation work arising from the Consortium activities; in
 25 other words, are not liable for Environmental Impact,

<p>Sheet 15</p> <p style="text-align: right;">2551</p> <p>10:09 1 capital E, capital I, was released. Please protect and 2 defend the rights of Chevron, Texaco, and TexPet. 3 Now, Ecuador likes to say to you what could we do, 4 as if it were some sort of a passive observer of the 5 undermining of these releases. But let's take a look back 6 at some of what it did do. It knew that the Settlement 7 Agreements barred the Lago Agrio claims, so it sought to 8 undermine them, by instituting criminal proceedings against 9 the signatories to those agreements, and Ms. Mouawad walked 10 you through that sordid story before, the timeline of the 11 events for the investigation and the proceedings 12 themselves--the reopening, all of it, are at Slides 39 and 13 40 behind Tab 1 of your handout. But let's look at some of 14 the low lights of that process. 15 And we can start in August 2005 with Martha 16 Escobar, the Deputy Attorney General, who wrote in an 17 e-mail to the Plaintiffs' attorneys, if you look at the 18 "to" line, to the Plaintiffs' attorneys, about how the 19 A.G.'s Office and all of us working on the State's defense 20 are searching for a way to nullify or undermine the value 21 of the Remediation Contract, searching for a way to breach 22 the Settlement Agreements. The Attorney General remains 23 resolved, he wants to criminally try those who executed the 24 Contract, the evidence of criminal liability having been 25 already rejected by a prosecutor. They are going to try</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">2553</p> <p>10:12 1 Donziger instead of agreeing, says don't worry, nothing 2 Chevron says sticks these days. 3 So, collaborating with the Fiscalía, to undermine 4 and nullify releases executed by the State. If this is not 5 a breach, then I don't know what would be a breach of these 6 Release Agreements. 7 Now, Ecuador's response to all of this, amazingly, 8 is to shrug it off essentially before you. The charges 9 were dismissed, they say. No harm, no foul. They want you 10 to ignore what Mr. Veiga went through, being accused of 11 criminal acts and fearing the consequences as he traveled 12 around South America and continued to work on these Ecuador 13 matters. They want you to ignore what Mr. Pérez went 14 through living in exile in Florida away from his family and 15 away from his Ecuadorian home for most of the last few 16 years before he passed away. Really, what appalling 17 conduct by a sovereign State shamelessly ignoring its own 18 contractual obligations much less any basic sense of 19 justice, using the full weight of its authority to support 20 Donziger and his fellow conspirators. I should hope that 21 we can at least agree that this kind of conduct rises to 22 the level of a breach of contract. 23 But it doesn't stop there, as Ms. Mouawad 24 referenced for you last year. Ecuador has reopened the 25 investigation, no formal proceedings have been filed, but</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">2552</p> <p>10:10 1 again. So, the Releases are in the way, so let's undermine 2 them. 3 A month later, Steven Donziger talks about the 4 collusive plan with the Government, how the idea is to use 5 it to convince the Government to take action against 6 Chevron to nullify the remediation Contract, compel the 7 Government to act against the company legally, to nullify 8 the remediation Contract. 9 These Plaintiffs' lawyers knew the hurdle that the 10 Remediation Contract had for their claims down in Lago 11 Agrio, so they needed it nullified and they colluded with 12 the Government to try to get it nullified. 13 October 6th of 2005, Donziger again, the key issue 14 is the criminal case, can we get that going, Ricardo Veiga 15 likely will be knocked out of the box by the criminal 16 investigation and being called as a witness. This will be 17 useful for us in Lago and in the ongoing criminal 18 investigation. 19 And then in 2009, the honest confession from a 20 Plaintiffs' lawyer to Mr. Donziger, he says on 21 February 4th: Dude, if the guys at Jones Day--that's 22 Chevron's counsel--get a hold of this, it's gonna hurt us. 23 It's pretty much irrefutable evidence of us collaborating 24 with the Fiscalía to get Reis Veiga and Pérez convicted." 25 Irrefutable evidence. We agree. And then of course,</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">2554</p> <p>10:14 1 they've reopened the investigation that continues to hang 2 over the people who signed this Release Agreement. You see 3 no less than President Correa's favorite advisor, Alexis 4 Mera, October 7th of 2013, he said, "I have asked the 5 Prosecutor General--recall this is the same Prosecutor 6 General who seems unwilling to investigate any of the 7 judicial fraud, the evidence of which you have seen in this 8 case--but Mr. Mera focusing on the Releases said: "I have 9 asked the Prosecutor General publicly, and privately, I 10 have gone to see him, to ask him to bring criminal actions 11 for embezzlement of public funds against all of these 12 officials. They committed treason. There is that word 13 again. President Correa has demanded that the Prosecutor 14 reopen proceedings and there have actually been a series of 15 so-called site inspections preliminary to just that, and we 16 will walk you through the evidence of that in our 17 Post-Hearing Brief as well. 18 You see the words from the Minister of the 19 Environment just last summer. Ecuador is going to pursue 20 this to the very end. All efforts by our Attorney 21 General's Office, to ensure that this oil company 22 acknowledges the harm that it caused and responds with the 23 appropriate compensation. As if there hadn't been a 24 Release Agreement and a Remediation Action Plan properly 25 implied that already did just that.</p>

10:15 1 And, of course, flouting your Interim Measures
 2 Awards, Ecuador continues to undermine the Releases
 3 globally. To you, they complain every few months about
 4 limited resources while spending the public funds liberally
 5 across the world, promoting through payments to various
 6 publicity groups and the like, promoting their declared
 7 number one foreign policy priority, as Mr. Bishop noted in
 8 his opening presentation: The Lago Agrio Judgment.
 9 Do you remember in 2010 when they used to come
 10 before you and say we have nothing to do with this case?
 11 Number 1, foreign policy priority.
 12 I could go on, Mr. President, about the various
 13 breaches but please do review the materials behind Tab 1 in
 14 the handout. Before our break, though, I would like to
 15 answer a couple of your questions about causation and
 16 veil-piercing, which as you know and as I argued in my
 17 opening presentation, were additional legal absurdities in
 18 the Lago Agrio Judgment.
 19 On causation, I think that the issue for its
 20 effect on a denial-of-justice case, what it ultimately
 21 boils down to is fairly straightforward: The Parties agree
 22 that causation is a required element for an environmental
 23 tort in Ecuador. We disagree on who has the burden of
 24 proof with respect to that element. And you can look at
 25 the references from Doctor Coronel, Dr. Barros and then

10:18 1 articles for the rather unremarkable proposition that there
 2 was a form of merger between Texaco and a Chevron
 3 subsidiary.
 4 And then it says this, what you see on Slide 66:
 5 Per the principle of good faith, any citizen, Ecuadorian or
 6 North American, who heard the public statements made by the
 7 companies Chevron and Texaco would have inevitably come to
 8 the conviction of a merger between them.
 9 So, again, I encourage you to read Pages 11 to 13
 10 of the Judgment to see the true absurdity in this Court's
 11 veil-piercing holding.
 12 I also encourage you to read Tabs 2 and 3 of your
 13 handout. Behind Tab 2 is the Witness Statement of
 14 Chevron's corporate governance liaison, Frank Soler. He
 15 details the merger transaction, and he explains how Texaco,
 16 Inc. survived with even more equity value than it had
 17 pre-merger. He explains how its assets and its liabilities
 18 were fully intact because of the particular form, the
 19 reverse triangular merger that took place. And to that end
 20 I would say that Paragraph 20 of his Statement is
 21 particularly informative.
 22 Behind Tab 3 is the Expert Report of Delaware law
 23 professor William Allen, who is a former Chief Judge of the
 24 Chancery Court there, and he explains the legality of the
 25 merger under the applicable law, which was

10:17 1 Dr. Andrade on the other side for that discussion.
 2 But recall from my opening that the Cassation
 3 Decision refused to consider evidence from Chevron of
 4 Petroecuador's causation, saying that it would violate due
 5 process because Petroecuador isn't a party to the case.
 6 That was the Cassation Decision's legal conclusion, and
 7 that's the legal absurdity that's at the heart of our
 8 denial-of-justice case on causation. Regardless of burden
 9 of proof, that issue transcends burden of proof to say that
 10 that can't be considered, the factual causation by
 11 Petroecuador is a legally absurd result under Ecuadorian
 12 law as it would be under the law of any system.
 13 And I'll note before I move to veil-piercing, that
 14 as I said, Dr. Barros and Dr. Coronel spent a lot of time
 15 with these issues in their Reports. You heard from
 16 Dr. Andrade because we confronted him. You have not had
 17 the opportunity to hear from Dr. Barros and from
 18 Mr. Coronel because Ecuador did not want to confront them,
 19 did not want you to hear from them.
 20 Now, on veil-piercing, you asked if the Judgment
 21 has findings of abuse of the corporate form as to the
 22 Chevron/Texaco merger. It does not. What it does, and I
 23 encourage you to look at pages roughly 11 through 13 of the
 24 Judgment, which is at Claimants' Exhibit 931--what it does
 25 is it cites a series of PowerPoint presentations and news

10:20 1 ignored--absolutely ignored with no explanation by the Lago
 2 Agrio Judgment in those pages that I've asked you to
 3 review. And again, the reason I'm putting those in your
 4 handout and asking you to take a careful look at them is
 5 because Ecuador again chose not to confront these
 6 particular witnesses and chose not to let you hear from
 7 them in person.
 8 Finally, you asked for the reference for the
 9 Plaintiffs suing the wrong party in their initial
 10 complaint, and so here it is on Slide 67, it's Exhibit 716
 11 from Steven Donziger's diary January 24, 2006, and what he
 12 says is this goes back to Alberto's, and by Alberto he
 13 means Plaintiffs' lawyer Alberto Wray, this goes back to
 14 Alberto's errors, suing the wrong party in the complaint.
 15 This is one of the many reasons why the Plaintiffs had to
 16 ghostwrite this Judgment. They had to fix this mistake and
 17 they had to navigate numerous other issues and
 18 difficulties, like the exposure of the Cabrera fraud, the
 19 use of the cleansing Experts, lots of complications that
 20 they had to navigate, and they couldn't rely on Judge
 21 Zambrano, of course, to get it right, and so they bought
 22 the opportunity to write this Judgment. This is part of
 23 the reason for that.
 24 So, with that, I will close my presentation and,
 25 as Mr. Bishop mentioned, this might be a good time for our

10:21 1 morning break.
 2 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you very much.
 3 Let's have a 15-minute break, and we will come
 4 back at 25 to 11:00.
 5 (Brief recess.)
 6 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Let's resume.
 7 MR. BISHOP: Yes, Mr. President. We will now move
 8 into the international law issues and start with David
 9 Weiss, who will discuss the jurisdictional and the
 10 admissibility issues.
 11 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Mr. Weiss.
 12 MR. WEISS: Thank you.
 13 Professor Lowe asked during the opening arguments
 14 for Claimants' case regarding when the breaches are said to
 15 have occurred especially in light of the fact that
 16 Claimants filed their Notice of Arbitration in 2009; and on
 17 Friday the Tribunal asked the related question of whether
 18 this timing has any effect on your jurisdiction or the
 19 admissibility of those claims under the lex arbitri, the
 20 UNCITRAL Rules, or public international law.
 21 First, these sorts of temporal issues have no
 22 effect on your jurisdiction. They are an attack on the
 23 effectiveness or the defects in certain claims. They are
 24 not an attack on your power to rule on those claims. To
 25 the contrary, they assume that you have the power to rule

10:39 1 accordance with due process and in particular allow the
 2 counter-party a right to respond and prevent unreasonable
 3 delays in the course of the arbitration. And this is set
 4 forth in Article 20 of the UNCITRAL Rules.
 5 We think this is dispositive as to the question;
 6 nevertheless, we have cited on the next few slides a few
 7 additional authorities. For instance, this is consistent
 8 with the practice of the PCIJ and the ICJ. We've also
 9 cited several investor-State cases under the UNCITRAL
 10 Rules, but I would take one moment to bring to your
 11 attention a statement from the EnCana versus Ecuador
 12 Tribunal deciding an investor-State dispute under the
 13 UNCITRAL Rules where Professor Crawford, in discussing this
 14 discretion, stated that a balance must be struck between
 15 unreasonably requiring that new proceedings be commenced
 16 where the substance of a claim of breach of a BIT may
 17 arguably have been made out or very nearly made out, and
 18 subsequent questioned events put the question beyond doubt.
 19 That is very apropos to this case. To the extent you have
 20 any concerns as to the ripeness of Claimants' claims when
 21 asserted, there can be no doubt as of today, given the
 22 conduct of Ecuador since 2012, that all of Claimants'
 23 claims are ripe, provided that they fall within the
 24 Agreement to arbitrate.
 25 Which brings me to Ecuador's outstanding

10:37 1 on those claims, and this reasoning is consistent with your
 2 Award on Jurisdiction at Paragraph 4.91.
 3 Very well. As a question of admissibility, when
 4 did the breaches occur? Mr. Coriell touched on this a
 5 little bit. Certain conduct of the Ecuadorian State
 6 violated Claimants' rights under the Release and related
 7 rights under the Treaty before 2009. Subsequent conduct
 8 has continued to violate those obligations. But Claimants
 9 did not assert denial-of-justice claims in 2009. Now,
 10 certainly conduct that's inconsistent with the
 11 international minimal standard of due process required by
 12 international law had occurred prior to 2012, but on
 13 Claimants' case, at the latest, because of questions of
 14 exhaustion, Claimants' denial-of-justice claims ripened in
 15 2012 when they asserted them.
 16 Does this timing affect the admissibility of
 17 Claimants' claims under the lex arbitri, the UNCITRAL
 18 Rules, or public international law? The answer is no. We
 19 consulted with our Dutch counsel. There are no applicable
 20 mandatory rules which would take us to the UNCITRAL Rules.
 21 Nevertheless, it's somewhat of a moot point because Dutch
 22 arbitral practice is consistent with the practice under the
 23 UNCITRAL Rules, which is basically this Tribunal has the
 24 discretion to allow Claimants and Respondents to amend and
 25 supplement claims and defenses, provided that they do so in

10:40 1 objections to jurisdiction, and I will discuss those
 2 objections in four categories: First, objections to this
 3 Tribunal's jurisdiction under VI(1)(a), claims arising out
 4 of or relating to an investment agreement with respect to
 5 TexPet; claims under VI(1)(c) BIT breaches with respect to
 6 TexPet, and the same two categories with respect to
 7 Chevron.
 8 I would also note at the outset that Ecuador has
 9 challenged your Track 1A Award in the Dutch courts and in
 10 so doing also your Award on jurisdiction. Therefore, as a
 11 matter of Dutch law and international law, the
 12 Jurisdictional Award is final and binding.
 13 VI(1)(a), this Tribunal has already held that
 14 TexPet may assert claims related to its Investment
 15 Agreement. This Tribunal has held that the 1973 Concession
 16 and the 1995 Release comprise one Investment Agreement.
 17 VI(1)(a) jurisdiction includes disputes related
 18 to. It is broadly defined. It is not limited to claims
 19 arising under an Investment Agreement. And here I depart
 20 from your prior Award and note that the Commercial Cases
 21 Tribunal expressly held that VI(1)(a) provides jurisdiction
 22 to bring claims directly under customary international law
 23 provided that they relate to an investment agreement. And
 24 as Mr. Bishop foreshadowed, this is a very important point
 25 for purposes of remedies, which Mr. Kehoe will address

10:42 1 later today.
 2 Ecuador has not contested in this proceeding your
 3 jurisdiction to decide denial-of-justice claims directly
 4 under customary international law, provided that they
 5 relate to an investment agreement.
 6 Your jurisdiction with respect to TexPet under
 7 VI(1)(c), your Award on Jurisdiction: TexPet has an
 8 investment. That investment began in the 1960s; it
 9 continues to exist today. And if I could bring your
 10 attention to the red underline, it includes the Lago Agrio
 11 Litigation, and that makes sense because, as you also state
 12 in your Decision on Jurisdiction, remediation is a normal
 13 part of an oil concession.
 14 Now, Ecuador's principal argument with respect to
 15 TexPet historically has been that TexPet was not a party to
 16 the Lago Agrio Litigation and, therefore, it hasn't
 17 suffered any harm, and, therefore, it has no standing in
 18 this forum to complain about what transpired in the Lago
 19 Agrio Litigation. This Tribunal in its decision on
 20 jurisdiction already rejected that argument at least as to
 21 TexPet's release claims for non-compensatory relief. But
 22 even to the extent that Ecuador's argument had water as to
 23 compensatory relief at one point in time, it does not
 24 today. As you will recall when we were examining Professor
 25 Andrade, the Ecuadorian judiciary has imposed all of the

10:46 1 that Dr. Andrade agreed when discussing the Cassation
 2 Court's Judgment and the Lago Agrio Litigation that at
 3 least in part the right to live in a clean environment was
 4 being vindicated, and I submit, at least for purposes of
 5 jurisdiction under VI(1)(a), this is sufficient to provide
 6 Chevron with the jurisdictional bases to assert
 7 denial-of-justice claims under customary international law.
 8 Your jurisdiction over Chevron's claims under
 9 VI(1)(c). This Tribunal has already held that Chevron may
 10 bring claims with respect to its indirect investment in
 11 TexPet. You reserved for the merits the question of the
 12 extent to which whether Chevron, on that basis alone, can
 13 seek all of the relief that it seeks in this arbitration.
 14 We submit that it is more than sufficient. What precisely
 15 is Chevron's indirect investment? It's the same investment
 16 as TexPet's. The only difference is that TexPet had a
 17 direct investment from the 1960s that continues to exist
 18 today. As of 2001, Chevron acquired an indirect investment
 19 in that same investment, and that continues to exist to
 20 this day.
 21 Thus, since 2001, Chevron has had an investment in
 22 Ecuador, and all of Chevron's claims in this arbitration
 23 concern that investment.
 24 Now, to put a finer point on it, but for that
 25 link, but for that indirect ownership, there is no more

10:44 1 liability arising out of the Lago Agrio Judgment directly
 2 on TexPet. It has seized TexPet's bank accounts, and it
 3 has purported to seize TexPet's interest in the Commercial
 4 Cases Award.
 5 Your jurisdiction over Chevron's claims under
 6 VI(1)(a), again, I began with your Award on Jurisdiction.
 7 There is an investment agreement that includes both the
 8 1973 Concession and the 1995 Release. Chevron is a
 9 Releasee. Chevron may enforce its rights under the 1995
 10 Agreement. Jurisdiction under VI(1)(a) is broad and
 11 includes claims related to the Investment Agreement and
 12 does not require original contractual privity. And as I've
 13 already noted, it provides a basis for asserting
 14 denial-of-justice claims directly under customary
 15 international law.
 16 Now, Ecuador's argument focuses on your limited
 17 holding that the 1995 Release Agreement by itself is not an
 18 investment agreement, that Chevron was not a party to the
 19 Concession Agreement and, therefore, Chevron cannot bring a
 20 claim under VI(1)(a). We believe your reasoning has
 21 already rejected that argument at least as to the 1995
 22 agreement; and, therefore, Ecuador's entire argument under
 23 this prong is predicated on it prevailing entirely on the
 24 Track 1 issues. I'm not going to reargue the Track 1
 25 issues that Mr. Coriell has covered, but I would note again

10:47 1 connection between Chevron Corporation and the impacts in
 2 the Oriente than Federal Express or Google. That alone is
 3 sufficient.
 4 Let me address Ecuador's counter-arguments.
 5 Ecuador argues that TexPet has not suffered any harm in the
 6 Lago Agrio litigation; and, therefore, there has been no
 7 harm to Chevron's indirect investment. And that kind of
 8 makes sense with perverse logic. Again, these treaties
 9 were all designed in the wake of Barcelona Traction to
 10 provide standing for indirect investment. What does that
 11 typically entail? The most that an indirect investor in
 12 almost every investor-State case can lose is the money they
 13 contribute and the value of the company that they own. And
 14 yet here, based exclusively on indirect ownership of
 15 TexPet, billions of dollars have been imposed directly upon
 16 Chevron.
 17 Ecuador argues that the right to limited liability
 18 is not a part of its investment. It's not an "investment
 19 treaty right." It's a legal right under municipal law.
 20 This argument confuses the components of an "investment"
 21 which is determined by the definition of investment and the
 22 relevant Treaty with the substantive treaty rights. The
 23 legal right to limited liability under municipal law is a
 24 claim to performance having economic value and associated
 25 with an investment. As such, it falls squarely within the

10:49 1 definition of "investment" in Article I of this Treaty.
 2 And, therefore, Ecuador has an obligation to accord
 3 Chevron's right to limited liability with fair and
 4 equitable treatment, and Ecuador has an obligation to
 5 provide Chevron with an effective means of enforcing its
 6 right to limited liability.
 7 Next, Ecuador argues that Chevron did not
 8 contribute to the Ecuadorian economy and, therefore, it
 9 cannot complain it does not have an investment. This comes
 10 from the Salini line of cases. It is a controversial
 11 element of the Salini line of cases, but more importantly,
 12 Salini has to do with the concept of "investment" in the
 13 ICSID Convention, which famously does not have a definition
 14 of "investment," and even there it is very controversial.
 15 ICSID Awards have been annulled for applying it. In its
 16 opening argument, Ecuador cited GEA v. Ukraine, and yet
 17 that case at Paragraphs 137-143 discusses and acknowledges
 18 the controversial nature of the Salini line of cases.
 19 It is entirely inappropriate to take a
 20 controversial element of a controversial test having to do
 21 with a different Treaty and seek to import it into an
 22 entirely different Treaty that has a definition of
 23 "investment." Nevertheless, it's an entirely moot point.
 24 Even if one accepts the contribution element entirely, the
 25 question is not whether each individual legal right that

10:52 1 focused on the facts of those cases; we were citing it for
 2 the principle. It's a general principle of law. It's
 3 fairly straightforward. The question is how it should
 4 apply to this case, and we submit it is fundamentally
 5 unfair for the Ecuadorian State to impose billions of
 6 dollars on Chevron as if it were TexPet as if they were one
 7 and the same, and then turn around for purposes of
 8 investor-State arbitration and insist that Chevron be
 9 treated as a separate legal personality.
 10 Again, that functions whether or not you think the
 11 veil-piercing was illegitimate. But if you were to
 12 conclude that the veil-piercing was arbitrary and
 13 illegitimate, Ecuador's objection is even worse because it
 14 seeks to benefit from its own improper veil-piercing to
 15 deprive Chevron of this forum. Ecuador cited BG Group in
 16 its Opening Argument, where that Tribunal declined to allow
 17 the parent corporation BG to bring contractual claims that
 18 belonged to a contract of Metrogas.
 19 Let me pause on that for one second. That
 20 argument succeeded. But why did it succeed? It succeeded
 21 because that Tribunal and Argentina respected the corporate
 22 separateness between Metrogas and BG. What Argentina did
 23 not do in that case is impose billions of dollars in fake
 24 liability on BG Group for the alleged conduct of Metrogas
 25 and a State-owned joint venture partner and then turn

10:51 1 comprises a component of the investment contributes to the
 2 Ecuadorian economy in some esoteric or vague way. The
 3 question is whether the investment contributes to the
 4 Ecuadorian economy. And TexPet and Chevron's investment
 5 contributed \$23 billion to the Ecuadorian Treasury and
 6 billions and billions more to the Ecuadorian economy.
 7 Finally, there is the open question of Chevron's
 8 status as a direct investor. We don't think this Tribunal
 9 needs to reach that question. As we've already submitted,
 10 your jurisdiction over Chevron's indirect investment is
 11 more than sufficient. Nevertheless, let me make three
 12 quick points:
 13 The Ecuadorian judiciary has pierced the corporate
 14 veil between TexPet and Chevron. As a result, whether you
 15 think that veil-piercing was legitimate or not, as a direct
 16 result under Ecuadorian law, the rights and obligations of
 17 TexPet flow to Chevron. Dr. Coronel addressed this in his
 18 August 28th, 2012 report at Paragraph 11, and he also
 19 addressed it in his June 13, 2013 Report at Paragraphs 25
 20 to 28. That is a separate question from our preclusion
 21 argument under international law.
 22 In its Opening Argument, Ecuador argued that we
 23 had no authority for our preclusion argument. We cited
 24 several authorities in our Counter-Memorial on Jurisdiction
 25 at Paragraphs 82 through 96. We were not particularly

10:54 1 around and argue that BG cannot complain about that conduct
 2 in an investor-State forum.
 3 For these reasons, this Tribunal has ample
 4 jurisdiction with respect to both TexPet's and Chevron's
 5 claims under both Article VI(1)(a) and VI(1)(c) of the
 6 Treaty and, as a result, has the power and the duty to
 7 decide the Claims before you and to discuss the content of
 8 those claims.
 9 I yield the floor to Professor Paulsson.
 10 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you.
 11 Professor Paulsson.
 12 MR. PAULSSON: Good morning, gentlemen. I'll
 13 address international law issues relevant to Track 2;
 14 namely, denial of justice under customary international law
 15 and the treaty breaches, but you will find me most of the
 16 time addressing a subtopic, "exhaustion."
 17 Members of the Tribunal, the sheer weight of
 18 evidence that Chevron has been able to put forth in this
 19 case is massive, notwithstanding the considerable efforts
 20 of those involved to conceal their misconduct. Now, in
 21 Loewen, the Tribunal found that an outrage--that's the
 22 Tribunal's word, an outrage--had been committed in the
 23 conduct of a trial by a single judge. What should one say
 24 if, instead, several appellate jurisdictions up to the U.S.
 25 Supreme Court had applauded and endorsed the Mississippi

10:56 1 Judgment, that U.S. prosecutors had blankly refused to
 2 consider evidence of a gross fraud--that the U.S.
 3 Government had indicated in formal submissions and in
 4 treaty arbitration that the remedy which Loewen was
 5 required to exhaust was available in a particular Appellate
 6 Court, which then denied having any authority to consider
 7 the matter, that a U.S. Federal Court nevertheless endorsed
 8 the Judgment for enforcement abroad; and that the U.S.
 9 President on a weekly telecast proclaimed that the
 10 un-investigated fraudulent judgment was the most important
 11 in the history of the country, and it was a matter of
 12 national policy of highest priority to influence other
 13 countries to enforce the Award?

14 And the Attorney General of the United States
 15 stands before the international tribunal and says with a
 16 straight face that although his country has flouted every
 17 order pronounced by the Tribunal, and although he has
 18 publicly condemned the arbitrators for their failure to
 19 obey the decisions of his country's courts, he invokes the
 20 very international law which he rejects to require Loewen
 21 to seek some remedy in some other Court of First Instance.
 22 What do you call this? What comes after outrage?

23 I would like to start off by addressing your
 24 specific question about the relevance of the environmental
 25 evidence. The only role it serves in Track 2 is to

10:59 1 from issuing a Track 2 Award since this offset request
 2 could only apply to the Claimants' tertiary request for
 3 damages, the quantum of which has been reserved for
 4 Track 3. Indeed, Ecuador has declined to quantify its
 5 allegations of environmental damage and instructed its
 6 experts to do the same, not talk about this. This confirms
 7 that the only relevance that Ecuador's environmental case
 8 has to the issues before you in Track 2 is whether the Lago
 9 Agrio Judgment satisfied minimum criteria of judicial
 10 rationality.

11 Turning to the question when precisely the claimed
 12 denial of justice occurred is a mere curiosity rather than
 13 a jurisdictional impediment, as Mr. Weiss explained. When
 14 I say, "curiosity," I use the word in its fundamental
 15 old-fashioned sense: Something strange. When a State is
 16 in the position of defending itself against a claim of
 17 international law, it tends to take great care, as of the
 18 commencement of the case, to stop violating its
 19 international obligations. In this case, the conduct of
 20 Ecuador is really hard to believe.

21 I do not even know if it is correct to say that
 22 Ecuador is defending itself in the sense of arguing that it
 23 has respected its international obligations. Rather, it
 24 recognizes no obligations to international law. Speaking
 25 repeatedly through its Head of State, it says that this

10:57 1 corroborate the existence of a denial of justice, full
 2 stop. Of course, you do not sit as a court of appeal, but
 3 you can review the substance of the Lago Agrio Judgment
 4 when evaluating the denial-of-justice claims. If your
 5 Tribunal concludes that the Judgment's factual, legal, and
 6 damages holdings are objectively absurd--divorced from
 7 reality is how Dr. Hinchee put it--that proves a breakdown
 8 in the legal process. The testimony you heard this week
 9 and the various Expert Reports you have read reveal the
 10 preposterousness of the Judgment's treatment of causation
 11 and the absurdity of the \$9.5 billion. Ms. Renfroe will
 12 return to discuss later the unrefuted evidence that the
 13 Judgment's remediation Award is almost 90 times more than
 14 Petroecuador's estimated total remediation costs for all
 15 environmental liabilities in the former Concession Area,
 16 where it has been the one and only polluter for the last
 17 quarter of a century.

18 To be sure, Ecuador argues that the environmental
 19 evidence before you support its, they call it, "offset
 20 theory," but that theory has no possible traction in this
 21 case, given that the Lago Agrio Record is completely and
 22 irretrievably tainted, which, in fact, Ecuador has
 23 implicitly conceded by instructing LBG to gather new
 24 evidence.

25 At any rate, this need not detain your Tribunal

11:00 1 Tribunal is comprised of crooks (corrupt arbitrators) and
 2 that it is for the State and its courts to decide what it
 3 needs to do, not this institution created by the Treaty
 4 which it has denounced.

5 So, what is Chevron to do when faced with the fact
 6 that Ecuador breaches international law by thumbing its
 7 nose at the Orders of this Tribunal? Must Chevron file a
 8 new BIT arbitration and ask a new set of arbitrators for
 9 relief? And an arbitration after that, when the President
 10 of Ecuador laughs off whatever decisions the second
 11 Tribunal makes?

12 When you think about it, States who are as
 13 violently opposed to international tribunals as this one
 14 usually simply default. This at least has the merit of
 15 avoiding hypocrisy. In this case, Mr. Correa calls you
 16 corrupt while his lawyers appear politely before you
 17 clamoring for due process. What is going on here? Isn't
 18 it clear? Ecuador participates because Mr. Correa would
 19 like to give the appearance that Ecuador cares about
 20 international law. But it does not, and he must find some
 21 explanation for all the adverse BIT Awards, so he blames
 22 the system. He blames you. You're convenient. You, of
 23 course, cannot answer in kind--you can only answer in the
 24 voice of international law.

25 So, let's talk about exhaustion.

11:02 1 Chevron raised all of its complaints about the
 2 process and about the Judgment with the Appellate Court,
 3 which ignored most and rejected others on entirely specious
 4 grounds, as you have heard. Most significantly, the
 5 Appellate Court deferred to the supposed sana critica of
 6 Mr. Zambrano and affirmed the Judgment in toto without
 7 bothering to determine whether it had been secretly written
 8 by the Plaintiffs. Additional recourse then remained
 9 available to Chevron, but the Appellate Court at that point
 10 ignored the Tribunal's interim measures Awards and
 11 certified the Judgment as enforceable abroad.

12 Now, we do not argue and we do not ask the
 13 Tribunal to hold that the enforceability of a judgment
 14 results in the consummation of a denial of justice in all
 15 circumstance in every case when this might happen. But it
 16 clearly did in this case where Ecuador took the affirmative
 17 step of declaring the Judgment enforceable knowing full
 18 well that the Plaintiffs would immediately take it abroad,
 19 which, in fact, they did.

20 The irreducible premise of exhaustion is that the
 21 State has the power to remedy the harms arising from the
 22 denial of justice and to do so effectively. Mr. Ugarte
 23 stated in opening that, "the test is whether or not the
 24 local remedy is effective to address the harm complained
 25 of." Transcript Page 234. Professor Mayer likewise

11:03 1 acknowledged at Page 215 that a remedy must be effective,
 2 and I quote: "In some situations there is no possibility
 3 of redress when a first instance or appeal Judgment has
 4 been enforced." Although neither of them would admit it,
 5 these precepts, which they acknowledged, are dispositive
 6 here; they're decisive, where enforcement is actively being
 7 pursued abroad. Ecuadorian courts don't have the power to
 8 control the actions of foreign sovereign courts. Where
 9 there is no effective remedy remaining, there is
 10 consummation of the denial of justice.

11 This left Professor Mayer to argue that the mere
 12 possibility of obtaining relief through a CPA action before
 13 the Judgment is enforced abroad requires that it be
 14 pursued. This is not, and cannot be, the test for
 15 exhaustion.

16 Members of the Tribunal, let us, just for a
 17 moment, suspend what is surely the disbelief of every
 18 person in this room and assume that a sole Ecuadorian judge
 19 Hearing a CPA complaint unpatriotically nullifies the Lago
 20 Agrio Judgment in its entirety, and the result is then
 21 summarily and unpatriotically affirmed by the Appellate
 22 Court, the National Court of Justice, the Constitutional
 23 Court--notwithstanding their prior refusal to do so.

24 One would hope that this would cause the pending
 25 actions in Argentina, Brazil, and Canada to be dismissed,

11:05 1 but two points: First, even with the enforcement abroad
 2 forestalled, Chevron would have no effective recourse in
 3 Ecuador for the harms it has already suffered, including
 4 the significant fees it has incurred over the past three
 5 years defending the vexatious foreign enforcement actions.
 6 Complete success in Ecuador would not wipe out the injury.
 7 It would simply reduce the amount of damages flowing from
 8 the consummated delict.

9 Second, and more important, this partial redress
 10 would be entirely serendipitous and contingent upon events
 11 and activities beyond Ecuador's control. Let me explain.

12 It is just happenstance that the Plaintiffs have
 13 brought only three foreign enforcement proceedings and that
 14 they have not yet reached conclusion. The Tribunal will
 15 recall that an Argentine trial court froze all the assets
 16 of a Chevron subsidiary operating there. If that freezing
 17 order had not been overturned by the Argentine Supreme
 18 Court, it is indisputable that Chevron would have suffered
 19 substantial harm for which there is no adequate remedy in
 20 Ecuador. This is the critical point: The question of
 21 exhaustion must be answered objectively at the relevant
 22 time; it cannot turn on future possibilities and
 23 contingencies beyond the control of the Claimant and beyond
 24 the control of the State.

25 It's not enough that a remaining remedy might be

11:06 1 effective. Where the victim of a denial of justice is
 2 facing imminent harms for which the breaching State is no
 3 longer capable of providing effective redress, the delict
 4 is consummated. The victim of a denial of justice cannot
 5 have the doors of international law slammed in its face
 6 based upon the speculative possibility that things might
 7 somehow work out to some extent in the end, depending on
 8 the breaks. The uncertainty of the remedy, moreover, must
 9 be balanced against the severity of the harm. It cannot be
 10 forgotten that we're dealing with a \$9.5 billion Judgment
 11 and a government actively promoting its enforcement abroad.

12 Indeed, when Professor Mayer in his opening
 13 finally got around to acknowledging the possibility of a
 14 foreign Court enforcing the Judgment before the completion
 15 of a CPA action, he blithely answered his question, and I
 16 quote, "the trust--that's the trust with the Amazon Defense
 17 Front as its beneficiary--would be forced to give that back
 18 the money, which it would not have had time to spend."
 19 That's what he said. Transcript, Page 218.

20 Really? Professor Mayer apparently is unaware of
 21 the fact that the Amazon Defense Front has signed an
 22 inter-creditor agreement in which it has promised to put
 23 any enforcement proceeds immediately into a separate escrow
 24 account with immediate and priority payment going to the
 25 Plaintiffs' counsel and offshore funders. It's a

11:08 1 complicated agreement, but the Tribunal will surely recall
 2 the distribution waterfall in Article 3.2. It sets out
 3 nine categories of beneficiaries, and the Order in which
 4 they will receive payments from the escrow account. The
 5 first eight categories are restricted to lawyers, funders,
 6 and advisers.
 7 The Plaintiffs are ninth of nine. At last, the
 8 balance, if any, shall be paid to the Claimants or as
 9 otherwise required by applicable law. As for whatever
 10 might be left, who knows how much of it will make its way
 11 to the Government in return for its support of the
 12 plaintiffs which, after all, has been substantial. Not
 13 much hope for the indigenous, I fear. And Chevron would be
 14 left to seek restitution of a mere portion of its loss from
 15 a government which will be slow to accede to a claim of the
 16 demon Chevron and quick to claim sovereign immunity in its
 17 own courts.
 18 But let's ignore for the purposes of argument the
 19 evidence on record. Let's follow Professor Mayer's logic,
 20 and assume that all enforcement money will be transferred
 21 to an Ecuadorian trust where it will sit untouched pending
 22 the outcome of a CPA action, including its three layers of
 23 appellate review. Given the amount at issue here, that
 24 money will most likely have come from the forced sale of
 25 assets belonging to an independent Chevron subsidiary.

11:11 1 \$625 million bond. It was undisputed that the U.S. Supreme
 2 Court had the power to reduce the Bond, so the only
 3 question was whether there was a reasonable prospect that a
 4 writ of certiorari would be granted. The Loewen Tribunal
 5 ultimately determined in Paragraphs 215-217 that Loewen had
 6 failed to present sufficient evidence to explain its
 7 decision to settle the case rather than to pursue recourse
 8 in the Supreme Court, and concluded that the exhaustion
 9 requirement had not been satisfied.
 10 As Mr. Ugarte said in his opening, Loewen's mortal
 11 sin was failing to petition the U.S. Federal Supreme Court
 12 to strike down a bond requirement imposed by the
 13 Mississippi State courts, Page 234.
 14 Now, as I will elaborate in a moment, all of this
 15 was obiter dicta, and the Loewen arbitrators were
 16 embarrassingly and plainly wrong, but that's what they
 17 said.
 18 The Loewen situation has nothing to do with the
 19 issue here, which is, in any event, whether the Claimants
 20 were right to come to this Tribunal in March 2012 after the
 21 Appellate Court certified the Judgment as immediately
 22 enforceable. At that point, there were no adequate
 23 remedies available in Ecuador, not simply because the
 24 Judgment was enforceable, but because it was actively being
 25 enforced abroad, as I just said.

11:10 1 Gentlemen, what is the remedy in Ecuador for the total loss
 2 of a going concern in another country? I could go on,
 3 Members of the Tribunal, but surely at some point theory
 4 must make some allowance for reality.
 5 You'll note that I have been talking thus far only
 6 about the effectiveness of the remedies available in
 7 Ecuador after the Judgment was certified for enforcement
 8 abroad. If the remaining remedies are inadequate to
 9 redress the harms complained of, that brings the exhaustion
 10 analysis to its conclusion. There is no need to ask
 11 whether there is a reasonable possibility of those remedies
 12 succeeding because even if there was, they would not
 13 provide adequate redress. That's the situation here given
 14 the inherent inability of an Ecuadorian court to indemnify
 15 Chevron for the actions of other sovereigns with respect to
 16 a \$9.5 billion judgment.
 17 You'll note that I have been talking thus far only
 18 about the effectiveness of the remedies available in
 19 Ecuador after the Judgment was certified for enforcement
 20 abroad. If the remaining remedies are inadequate, the
 21 exhaustion analysis reaches its conclusion. That's
 22 different from the situation that obtained in Loewen. The
 23 issue in Loewen was whether Loewen was right to abandon
 24 further recourse and settle the case after the Mississippi
 25 Supreme Court denied its request to reduce the size of the

11:13 1 Contrast this with a statement in Paragraph 167 in
 2 Loewen that I quote: "Here the issue concerns the
 3 availability of the remedy rather than its adequacy or even
 4 its effectiveness." Loewen did not involve and did not
 5 address the adequacy of intra-State remedies in the face of
 6 foreign enforcement.
 7 Nor can Chevron be faulted for allowing the
 8 Judgment to become enforceable: The appellate and
 9 cassation courts refused Chevron's request that they comply
 10 with your Tribunal's interim measures Awards, which would
 11 have obviated the need to post a bond. At any rate, both
 12 sides agree that a bond would have been in the amount of at
 13 least--at least--\$1.9 billion, given the Appellate Court's
 14 affirmation of the punitive damages award, which, while not
 15 per se a denial of public international law, to answer a
 16 question from the Tribunal, is further confirmation of the
 17 denial of justice since punitive damages are a remedy which
 18 is not available under Ecuadorian law.
 19 I invite you to conclude on the punitive damage
 20 aspect that this was a gambit invented by the Plaintiffs'
 21 U.S. counsel very familiar with punitive damages to jack up
 22 the size of the Award to do two things: Either Chevron
 23 will be so scared of the number \$18 billion that it will
 24 say sorry, and pay the 9.5 billion immediately without
 25 fighting further; or if Chevron doesn't bite, have a higher

11:14 1 court reduce the Award to show how fair the courts are in
 2 Ecuador. Worth a try. Posting a bond of this amount in
 3 Ecuador would have been tantamount to a down payment on
 4 ransom given the fraud and collusion that had brought
 5 Chevron to this point. And here, not only were the
 6 remaining Ecuadorian judges limited in the scope of the
 7 relief that they could grant, but could hardly rule in
 8 favor of Chevron without placing their careers and
 9 livelihood at risk.

10 The situation is thus vastly different from that
 11 in Loewen. Still, the result here is dictated by the
 12 straightforward application of the test for exhaustion
 13 articulated in Loewen under Paragraph 168. Here it is.
 14 It's an obligation to exhaust remedies which are effective
 15 and adequate and are reasonably available to the
 16 complainant in the circumstances in which it is situated.
 17 Because the remedies in Ecuador cannot effectively and
 18 adequately redress the injuries Chevron has already
 19 suffered and may suffer from enforcement of the fraudulent
 20 judgment abroad, the exhaustion inquiry is at an end. This
 21 tracks the opinion filed in Loewen by then Professor
 22 Greenwood writing a couple of years before the Award was
 23 rendered, who wrote in Paragraph 41 of his First Opinion
 24 that, "It is well established that local remedies do not
 25 have to be exhausted when there are no effective remedies

11:17 1 it had been the victim of an outrage, Loewen then came up
 2 against a few disastrous sentences at the end to the effect
 3 that, by the way, so sorry, your claim must be rejected
 4 because you failed to exhaust remedies. The arbitrators
 5 could have been more merciful and just contented themselves
 6 with saying that the denial of justice story was
 7 irrelevant. But wait. Wait. Even the exhaustion of
 8 remedies finding was not the ratio decidendi. Because in
 9 the end, and few people seemed to notice this, the Tribunal
 10 ruled that under NAFTA, a national of one of the three
 11 countries cannot bring an action against its own State.
 12 You see, in the course of the bankruptcy, the denial of
 13 justice has caused a reorganization which involved the
 14 reincorporation of a Loewen entity in the United States.
 15 And so the Loewen corporate Claimant became American.

16 Now, every comment I have read about the Loewen
 17 Case says that the arbitrators got the rule of continuous
 18 nationality wrong. And what is one to say about the fact
 19 that the arbitrators simply forgot that there were two
 20 Loewen Claimants, right on the caption of the case, the
 21 second being Mr. Raymond Loewen, a natural person who had
 22 always been Canadian and so remained. His share of the
 23 claim was significant. He was just forgotten.

24 As we now know, one arbitrator revealed in a
 25 recorded public address some years after the event that

11:16 1 to exhaust."

2 Before leaving Loewen, let me say a few more words
 3 about that unfortunate case. When it was first decided, I,
 4 as someone in the midst of writing a book on the subject,
 5 was very happy, indeed, to see that in a major
 6 international case--against the United States no
 7 less--three eminent retired judges from the appellate
 8 jurisdictions of three respectable legal systems (two of
 9 them, in fact, former members of the Supreme Courts of
 10 their respective countries) had reviewed a trial record in
 11 depth and not hesitated to conclude that the discrimination
 12 against the foreigner, whose \$3 billion transaction had
 13 resulted in punitive damages of half a billion dollars was,
 14 I quote again, "an outrage," and thus a denial of justice.

15 But as time has passed and further details of this
 16 case have revealed themselves, I have resiled from that
 17 view and now conclude that the doubts hanging over the
 18 Loewen Award are so substantial that the case is best
 19 entirely forgotten.

20 The entire discussion of the outrageous denial of
 21 justice was perhaps the longest obiter dictum in history
 22 because it did not make any difference. Loewen's rejoicing
 23 must have been short-lived. Having been told by these
 24 distinguished persons at great length and with much
 25 indignant emphasis and fulsome citations of authority that

11:19 1 when he was appointed by the U.S. Government he had been
 2 told ex parte that this was a case which would destroy
 3 NAFTA if the United States were not successful in its
 4 defense, and he had answered: "You really know how to put
 5 pressure on me." Worse, he had asserted that he, of
 6 course, had had to dissent from the inconceivable finding
 7 that the United States was responsible for denial of
 8 justice, but was relieved in the end that the case was
 9 thrown out nevertheless. This comment was all the more
 10 remarkable since there was no recorded dissent at all. The
 11 entire award, including the obiter about the outrageous
 12 denial of justice was unanimous. One can only infer one
 13 thing: The U.S. arbitrator disagreed with the denial of
 14 justice finding but was willing to go along if a way could
 15 be found on another point so that the United States could
 16 win the case anyway. It's a deal. Perhaps you see why I
 17 say the case is best forgotten.

18 Of course, the only thing of present interest is
 19 what was said, in what one might describe as the
 20 intermediate obiter dictum about the failure to exhaust.
 21 That's the only thing of relevance here. As you might
 22 expect, this aspect of the decision has been extensively
 23 criticized as well, including at length in my book. One
 24 cannot fail to observe that none of the three arbitrators
 25 had credentials in international law. This is not the

11:20 1 place to find significant jurisprudence, whatever respect
 2 one might have for the achievements in other circumstances
 3 of the three individuals who struggled with case. But for
 4 us here it really doesn't matter. Even if the arbitrators
 5 had been right about exhaustion there, our case is
 6 different, as I have explained.

7 Indeed, although your Tribunal need not address
 8 the issue, it is manifest that the second required element
 9 for exhaustion--that the remedy, to quote Loewen, "be
 10 reasonably available, given the circumstances," is not met
 11 here, either. Every indication is that Chevron cannot
 12 receive fair treatment in Ecuador: The quid pro quo
 13 agreement between the Plaintiffs and Ecuador; the
 14 discriminatory, indefensible, and aberrant rulings against
 15 Chevron in the Lago Agrio Litigation; the active
 16 prosecution of Guerra while complaints against Zambrano,
 17 Fajardo, and Cabrera languish in oblivion; to say nothing
 18 of the frequent anti-Chevron rants of Mr. Correa.

19 In considering the effect of all of this on a weak
 20 and dependent judiciary, I ask you to bear in mind two
 21 fundamental propositions: First, international law must be
 22 practical or it will be a dead letter.

23 Second, a denial of justice can perfectly well be
 24 consummated by the Head of State, even if he is not a
 25 judge.

11:22 1 The first point is crystalized in
 2 Sir Hersch Lauterpacht's observation in the Norwegian Loans
 3 Case to the effect that "the requirement of exhaustion of
 4 local remedies is not a purely technical or rigid rule. It
 5 is a rule which international tribunals have applied with a
 6 considerable degree of elasticity." I consider this to be
 7 among the most insightful of all doctrinal statements I
 8 have ever read on this subject. If international law were
 9 overly formalistic the remedy would be pure illusion.
 10 Imagine that a country whose highest Appellate Court has
 11 failed to overturn a denial of justice in an important
 12 case, enacts a decree which, on its face gives some Court a
 13 new authority to reconsider the matter. "We must be judged
 14 by our system as a whole," the Government will say. "We
 15 have just improved it, and you must go there." And, lo and
 16 behold, the Government says the same thing two years again
 17 later when the foreigner gets yet another unfavorable
 18 ruling. Gentlemen, general principles of international law
 19 do not have specific rules about the need to try new as
 20 opposed to previously established means of recourse. But
 21 if international law cannot put an end to such a charade,
 22 the rule against denial of justice will be sheer hypocrisy.

23 Ecuador's invocation of the CPA is a similar
 24 charade, as brought into relief during the
 25 cross-examination of Dr. Andrade earlier this week.

11:23 1 Dr. Andrade, in his original Report, and Ecuador in its
 2 Track 2 Counter-Memorial, stipulated that Chevron would
 3 satisfy the exhaustion requirement with petitions to the
 4 National Court of Justice and the Constitutional Court. As
 5 Chevron pursued this path and as Chevron--as Ecuador came
 6 close to losing its main procedural defense, Ecuador and
 7 its Expert reversed themselves without explanation, moved
 8 the goal posts. This is just a contrivance. If it were
 9 not the CPA, it would have been something else. Ecuador
 10 rejects international law and does not want to answer it.

11 At this point, I wish to make a submission to the
 12 Tribunal in the most formal terms possible. The State of
 13 Ecuador, represented by its Attorney General, who is a
 14 co-signatory of its written Memorials, represented to
 15 Chevron in front of your Tribunal that Chevron was entitled
 16 to have its claim of corruption in the Lago Agrio Judgment
 17 heard by an Appellate Jurisdiction which then refused to
 18 consider Chevron's evidence at all. In light of this,
 19 Chevron submits that Ecuador simply cannot contend that
 20 Chevron needs to proceed to some other form of exhaustion
 21 because it sought the remedy which Ecuador formally
 22 represented as the appropriate one. Your Tribunal should
 23 not allow itself to become a partner in the age-old hustle
 24 known as bait-and-switch. It is offensive to good faith
 25 and to international law.

11:25 1 If we were to look at the CPA anyway and its
 2 terms, there are five inherent problems with its invocation
 3 by Ecuador:

4 First, as noted, it does not provide an adequate
 5 remedy for the damages that Chevron has suffered and may
 6 suffer abroad. I've dealt with that.

7 Second, Dr. Andrade confirmed that the doctrine of
 8 ultima ratio applies here, meaning that the CPA may not be
 9 invoked if there is an alternative forum. Chevron has not
 10 pursued a CPA action because it has been advised by local
 11 counsel that the Courts reviewing the Judgment have the
 12 power and duty to consider the evidence of fraud in order
 13 to vindicate the rights of due process enshrined in the
 14 Ecuadorian Constitution. Ecuador disagrees and would have
 15 you accept that Appellate Courts considering whether to
 16 affirm a judgment are disempowered from considering whether
 17 it was procured by fraud.

18 But Article 838 of the Code of Civil Procedure
 19 does not mandate such a perverse result. What it provides
 20 in its relevant part is that the Court shall rule on the
 21 merits of the case, and this, as it would apply here, means
 22 that the Appellate Court's consideration of the underlying
 23 merits in the Ecuadorian system would be limited to the
 24 evidence presented and designated during the evidentiary
 25 phase set by the Court of First Instance and established in

11:27 1 October 2003. By the way, the Appellate Court actually
 2 violated this provision by considering the cleansing
 3 Expert's Reports, but I digress, there are too many
 4 details.
 5 Article 838 does not purport anywhere to bar
 6 consideration of non-merits evidence going to conduct that
 7 affects the integrity of the proceedings and the bona fides
 8 of the Judgment under review, and Ecuador can cite no
 9 authority that it has ever been so read.
 10 Article 838 cannot be read as a prohibition or it
 11 would violate fundamental principles such as the supremacy
 12 of the Constitution; the direct and immediate application
 13 of constitutional guarantees; and the requirement that all
 14 proceedings shall provide due process. As you review the
 15 plain textual commands of these provisions, which you now
 16 see, recall the answer Dr. Andrade gave to Professor Lowe
 17 on Tuesday morning: Due process, he said, is not a duty,
 18 it "depends on the discretionality of the Judge."
 19 Transcript Page 2426.
 20 I think all of this speaks for itself, but to
 21 answer the Tribunal's question, there is a denial of
 22 justice regardless of the proper construction of
 23 Article 838. If we are correct that the Appellate Court
 24 had, but failed to exercise, the power to correct--to
 25 consider the evidence of fraud, that is a denial of

11:28 1 justice. Let me repeat. If we are correct that the
 2 Appellate Court had the power but failed to exercise it to
 3 consider the evidence of fraud, that's denial of justice.
 4 If Ecuador is correct that its judicial system is
 5 powerless to address fraud on direct appeal or even to stay
 6 enforcement during the pendency of a CPA action, then its
 7 system falls below international standards and has in this
 8 circumstance led to a denial of justice on that hypothesis
 9 as well. That's the Kingsley Case and other authorities I
 10 mentioned on the first day, European Court of Human Rights.
 11 Third, even if Points 1 and 2 are wrong, the CPA
 12 is still ineffective because it does not permit a stay of
 13 enforcement of the Judgment under review. Now, one might
 14 imagine a system where allegations of fraud committed in
 15 the course of the first instance proceedings are not
 16 addressed by an ivory-tower Appellate Court but rather
 17 deferred to a special Magistrate for a prompt Hearing. But
 18 for this imaginary system to make any sense, the Appellate
 19 Court would have to stay its hand until the fraud Hearing
 20 is resolved. But the CPA scenario constructed by Ecuador
 21 for the purposes of this case does not even have these
 22 basic attributes. Given that even Ecuador admits that a
 23 typical CPA action would take several years, this is not a
 24 remedy, it's an invitation to anarchy. And there is every
 25 reason to think that a CPA action brought by Chevron would

11:30 1 languish. Gentlemen, recall the Commercial Cases
 2 arbitration, where eight cases filed by Chevron had sat
 3 dormant for over ten years without decision, a delay
 4 condemned by the Böckstiegel Tribunal as violating
 5 Article II(7) of the Treaty. And those were less
 6 politicized cases in a less politicized time. It is hard
 7 to believe that a CPA Court would act with greater alacrity
 8 than the office the Prosecutor General, which has either
 9 contemptuously returned or ignored the crates of evidence
 10 sent to it by Chevron over the past four years about the
 11 fraud. And this is to say nothing of the fact that any CPA
 12 Judge who dared to rule for Chevron would be deemed a vende
 13 patrias, and that ruling would then be appealed to the very
 14 same courts that have already affirmed the ghostwritten
 15 Judgment.
 16 Fourth, as articulated in the work of David
 17 Mummery placed in record by Ecuador, as a matter of fact,
 18 local remedies should be deemed exhausted if the cost
 19 involved in proceeding considerably outweighs the
 20 possibility of any satisfaction resulting. As noted in my
 21 opening remarks, given the scope of the fraud here, Chevron
 22 would need to file not one, but several different CPA
 23 actions. This would only add to the costs and delays of an
 24 already ineffective remedy.
 25 Fifth, under Chevron's theory of the case,

11:31 1 furthermore, the remedy offered by the CPA is completely
 2 irrelevant. If you please, read together these two flatly
 3 inconsistent statements from Ecuador's Memorials. Track 2
 4 Rejoinder, Paragraph 220:
 5 After bringing a complaint under the Collusion
 6 Prosecution Act alleging a collusive action by means of
 7 fraud and ghostwriting, Chevron would be afforded full and
 8 proper recourse to address any claims of fraud or collusion
 9 in respect of Judge Zambrano's Judgment.
 10 Now, Paragraph 67 of Respondent's Track 2
 11 Supplemental Counter-Memorial: Claimants' efforts to
 12 impugn the Ecuadorian courts is focused on the Judgment
 13 rendered by Judge Zambrano. But as Dr. Andrade explains,
 14 this decision is not the operative Judgment because the
 15 intermediate Appeals Court reviewed and affirmed it de
 16 novo.
 17 Why is Ecuador recommending that Chevron attempt
 18 to nullify a judgment that Ecuador views as inoperative?
 19 Ecuador is asking Chevron to spend years pursuing relief
 20 that it would later argue, no doubt to this Tribunal when,
 21 in 2018 and 2019, it would argue that it's completely
 22 beside the point. Inoperative. Rather, if Ecuador is
 23 seriously arguing that Chevron hasn't been harmed by the
 24 Judgment because of the supposedly curative effects of the
 25 Appellate Court's 16-page review, a point Chevron

11:33 1 vehemently rejects, then that issue is ripe for this
 2 Tribunal's decision now, because nothing a CPA Court could
 3 say or do will address it.
 4 I said two fundamental propositions. The second
 5 one is shorter. It's this. While denial of justice always
 6 involves the functioning of the judicial process, extended
 7 possibly in some instances to some types of administrative
 8 determinations, international law does not limit
 9 responsibility, State responsibility, to acts of officials
 10 who are formally part of the judiciary. The reason why I
 11 thought it was worthwhile to write my book on the topic was
 12 that international law had evolved in three fundamental
 13 ways since the last comprehensive work on the subject,
 14 which was Freeman's book in 1938, and this was one of the
 15 three developments. I describe it in Chapter 3 under the
 16 subtitle "denial of justice by non-judicial authority."
 17 This is how I describe the evolution of the law. Forgive
 18 my self-quotation, written way before I had heard of this
 19 case obviously. "Once it is established that the relevant
 20 Act or Mission is attributable to the State, it does not
 21 matter whether the doors to justice were blocked by
 22 Executive fiat, legislative over-reaching, or judicial
 23 obstreperousness." What makes this case unprecedented is
 24 the innumerable confirmations of the denial of justice from
 25 various quarters.

11:35 1 Let me concentrate on the Head of State. I spoke
 2 a few moments ago of a weak and dependent judiciary.
 3 Perhaps I should have said despondent judiciary. Is that
 4 an outlandish claim? Of the myriad of documents you have
 5 seen in this case, if one had to pick three or four that
 6 were absolutely crucial, you might be pleased to hear there
 7 is one which is only one page long, and that's is C-127,
 8 when Mr. Correa describes who he is in his capacity as head
 9 of the entire Ecuadorian State. This is what he said in
 10 one of his Saturday radio broadcasts.
 11 "The President of Ecuador is not only the head of
 12 the Executive Branch, he is also head of the entire
 13 Ecuadorian State." Correa added that, "The Ecuadorian
 14 State is the executive, the legislative, the judiciary, the
 15 electoral, and the transparency and citizens oversight
 16 bodies, the superintendencies, the Prosecutor's Office and
 17 the Controller General's Office. The Ecuadorian State
 18 comprises all that. Why should it be strange for the Head
 19 of State to meet with the legislators, with the members of
 20 the electoral counsel or with the Members of the Court of
 21 Justice to get to know each other, to support each other?
 22 There is nothing wrong with that. Quite the opposite, it's
 23 a very positive thing."
 24 When the Head of State says that he not only
 25 endorses the corrupt Judgment but has instructed Ecuador's

11:36 1 diplomatic representatives to militate around the world to
 2 secure its enforcement as a matter of national priority on
 3 policy, as of now without waiting for any possible
 4 correction, how flaccid would international law have to be
 5 to find that the denial of justice is not ripe for
 6 assessment under international law, and that Ecuador must
 7 still be given a chance, which visibly it doesn't want to
 8 take, and when any hope of effective restoration is long,
 9 long gone.
 10 The realities of our situation, Members of the
 11 Court, render Ecuador's argument for the obviously futile
 12 test irrelevant, we would pass with flying colors even
 13 under that. But our Memorials lay out the clear consensus
 14 that has emerged in favor of the test as being one of
 15 reasonable possibility. I will say only two things. You
 16 heard again in opening that the Sole Arbitrator's Decision
 17 in the Finnish Ships Case was seminal in the development of
 18 the obvious futility test, but no one who's actually read
 19 the case would say that Mr. Justice Bagge applied that test
 20 at all. He simply said that an appeal would have been
 21 obviously futile when it turned upon a factual finding that
 22 the Appellate Court could not review. Obviously correct.
 23 But very different from saying that appeals must be brought
 24 if they are not obviously futile. That's it.
 25 My second observation is that the Apotex Case

11:38 1 recently decided under the chairmanship of Toby Landau, is
 2 not an outlier which contradicts what I have just said.
 3 The obviously futile test was applied there, but only
 4 because of a joint stipulation of the Parties, for some
 5 reason, as Mr. Landau was careful to note pointedly and
 6 repeatedly, but apparently not enough times for everyone to
 7 notice it. See, for example, his Paragraphs 257 and 268.
 8 In short, while I believe that the obvious
 9 futility test is wrong and irreconcilable with
 10 Lauterpacht's call for common sense and realistic weighing
 11 of the circumstances, if there is a case in which the
 12 standard cannot matter at all, this must be it. There is
 13 not, to borrow from Professor Mayer, even a tiny prospect
 14 of effective redress for Chevron in Ecuador.
 15 Let me finally, before I move to the Treaty,
 16 address among the most audacious statements Ecuador has
 17 made in this arbitration, which is that Ecuador is the
 18 victim of Chevron's deliberate failure to act. If I follow
 19 this argument, it is that Chevron allegedly knew of
 20 Plaintiffs' bribe to Zambrano before the Judgment issued,
 21 which is false, and decided to allow him to issue an
 22 \$18 billion Judgment against the company, which is insane.
 23 To put an end to this nonsense, the sole piece of
 24 contemporaneous evidence Chevron had of Zambrano's
 25 agreement with the Plaintiffs was double hearsay. This is

11:40 1 the Affidavit of a local Chevron attorney named Enrique
 2 Carvajal Salas, and the relevant portion is found in
 3 Paragraph 5. "In that meeting, my friend told me based on
 4 his discussion with Dr. Guerra, that Judge Zambrano would
 5 no longer try to reach some agreement with Chevron because
 6 he was aware that the company would not make financial
 7 arrangements with anybody, but, instead, that
 8 Judge Zambrano was sure to do so with the Plaintiffs." So,
 9 Guerra told a friend who told a Chevron lawyer. There is
 10 no link, no direct link, at the time with Zambrano itself,
 11 given the backlash that Chevron faced when it submitted
 12 authenticated videos of judicial malfeasance by Judge Núñez
 13 coming forward based on this double hearsay Affidavit,
 14 would surely have exposed Chevron to further charges of
 15 reckless and malicious defamation, as Mr. Bishop explained
 16 on the first day. This argument sits particularly poorly
 17 in Ecuador's mouth considering that when Chevron finally
 18 obtained sufficient confirmatory evidence of the
 19 ghostwriting scheme, it did present the evidence to
 20 Ecuador's Appellate Court, and we all know how that turned
 21 out.

22 Now, you could forget everything I have said about
 23 exhaustion and take a more direct route to the same
 24 conclusion. The fact is that Ecuador has, by its own
 25 actions, disqualified itself from relying on the exhaustion

11:42 1 Ecuador doesn't get it. You're not supposed to ignore the
 2 Orders of an international tribunal. Ecuador is saying
 3 three things unrepentantly: One, we are trying with all
 4 our might to enforce the Judgment, and we don't care what
 5 the Tribunal says or thinks about it. Two, Chevron is
 6 asking for the urgent nullification of the Judgment because
 7 it was a denial of justice, but, three, we insist that
 8 Chevron cannot do this, and will be powerless to stop the
 9 enforcement actions because Chevron has to run around on a
 10 wild goose chase and we will tell them that they must seek
 11 relief from one Court and then another, as we please. This
 12 really cannot be tolerated without belittling the
 13 international legal process.

14 The treaty claims. The breaches in our Memorials,
 15 Gentlemen, have been specific. They concern governmental
 16 actions unrelated to the Lago Agrio Litigation. To the
 17 extent that the treaty claims do concern judicial conduct
 18 in some way, Ecuador is mistaken in treating them as denial
 19 of justice redux with the same exhaustion requirements.
 20 Although these issues have been well rehearsed in the
 21 Memorials, I will happily address the Tribunal's questions
 22 about Chevron's treaty claims and their relationship to the
 23 denial-of-justice claims.

24 Ecuador has breached its obligation to provide
 25 fair and equitable treatment through non-judicial conduct

11:41 1 argument. It's violated your Orders. In doing so, it not
 2 only declined to take all measures to avoid enforcement of
 3 the Judgment, it has done the exact opposite. That is a
 4 violation of international law. And Ecuador is shameless
 5 about this.

6 In the waning moments of the hearing of the
 7 Witnesses Tuesday afternoon, I heard from the back of the
 8 room that Mr. Bloom was making an application to you for
 9 some type of Protective Order regarding Expert evidence in
 10 these proceedings. Since it was the last day of very
 11 lengthy witness examinations, I thought he might have been
 12 seeking to introduce a humorous note into the case. He
 13 said--and I'm quoting from the Transcript Page 2462: "All
 14 we're asking for is for this sensitive information that was
 15 produced under certain circumstances to be treated with a
 16 certainly level of sensitivity, especially with the
 17 overlay, the evidentiary overlay in terms of potential uses
 18 abroad or somewhere in the United States." Ironic, isn't
 19 it, for Ecuador's lawyer to ask you to be its accomplice as
 20 it seeks the violation of your own Order. You ordered the
 21 enforcement of the Judgment to be suspended. Ecuador
 22 disregards that Order, and now asks you to help facilitate
 23 enforcement.

24 In time, I understood that Mr. Bloom is apparently
 25 not a man of irony and that he was perfectly earnest.

11:44 1 in a variety of ways. Let me highlight just three:
 2 First, the Ecuadorian Government breached the
 3 fair-and-equitable-treatment standard failing to honor but
 4 instead working in bad faith to destroy the value of the
 5 Settlement and Release Agreement, as Mr. Coriell has
 6 already explained.

7 Second, the Head of State, the Attorney General,
 8 and other high-ranking officials have improperly
 9 interjected themselves into the Lago Agrio Litigation--with
 10 Mr. Correa, as I noted in my opening, even offering to call
 11 the Presiding Judge. Such conduct breaches the FET
 12 requirement, not only because it is inconsistent with
 13 Claimant's legitimate expectations, but because it's
 14 non-transparent, arbitrary, and done in bad faith. As
 15 confirmed, for example, by the Petrobart Decision, CLA-219,
 16 where the Tribunal based its finding of a breach of the
 17 Energy Charter Treaty FET provisions in part on the fact
 18 that the Vice-Prime Minister sent a single letter to the
 19 Court trying to influence the outcome of the case.

20 Similarly, in the recent decision of TECO versus
 21 Guatemala, CLA-615, a CAFTA Tribunal found a breach of the
 22 FET obligation through a regulator's attempt to influence
 23 review of the tariffs to be charged by the investor.

24 And third, the Ecuadorian Government has commenced
 25 a coordinated campaign to promote enforcement of the

11:45 1 Judgment. And investors can reasonably expect to be
 2 involved in foreign litigation, but not that the Government
 3 will use that litigation as a form of extortion,
 4 punishment, defamation.
 5 Altogether, the level of abuse directed against
 6 the Claimants here from the highest levels of Government is
 7 astounding. It's the antithesis of a State's obligation of
 8 fair and equitable treatment. This delict is separate and
 9 distinct from denial of justice. So is the anti-foreigner
 10 discrimination. There is no exhaustion requirement with
 11 respect to these non-judicial conduct, and they are ripe
 12 for resolution.
 13 Now, specifically with regard to Ecuador's breach
 14 of the effective means provision, to answer the Tribunal's
 15 question as to whether Article II(7) imposes obligations
 16 beyond those of customary international law, the answer is
 17 plainly affirmative.
 18 Article II(7) requires that Ecuador, let me quote,
 19 "provide effective means of asserting claims and enforcing
 20 rights." This is a specific and self-contained obligation,
 21 it makes no mention of customary international law.
 22 Ecuador argues that the United States intended to limit
 23 Article II(7) to the obligations of customary international
 24 law, but they do not establish a common intent of the
 25 Parties to the Treaty.

11:47 1 To the contrary, Professor Caron, in his Report,
 2 confirms that the preparatory work of the Treaty indicates
 3 that the effective means provision was intended to go
 4 beyond customary international law. That's in his Report
 5 of 3 September 2010. It would moreover have been senseless
 6 for the State Parties to have repeated in Article II(7) the
 7 obligation to provide the customary international law
 8 standard of treatment that is already required by
 9 Article II(3). An interpretation which denies the
 10 independent significance of Article II(7) obviously cannot
 11 be correct. This much was confirmed by the only two
 12 tribunals to have directly addressed the relationship
 13 between effective means provisions and customary
 14 international law. Those, Gentlemen, are the Tribunal's
 15 and the Commercial Cases, CLA-47, and White Industries,
 16 RLA-347 from Paragraph 92 on in that case. The conclusion
 17 of the Commercial Cases Tribunal applied to the
 18 Ecuador-U.S. BIT, which is, of course, the very Treaty
 19 before you.
 20 So, Article II(7) is properly read to place an
 21 affirmative duty upon Ecuador to provide measures that are
 22 adequate in practice to secure the rights at issue, rather
 23 than simply a negative promise not to deny justice. It
 24 calls for practical, timely, useful recourse. For example,
 25 trying a case of this magnitude and complexity through a

11:48 1 summary verbal proceeding breached Article II(7) because,
 2 among other things, it prevented Chevron from impleading
 3 Petroecuador.
 4 Your Tribunal asked specifically about
 5 Article II(7)'s application with respect, not to the Trial
 6 Court but rather to the higher courts. It's manifest that
 7 the Appellate Court breached this affirmative obligation by
 8 failing to consider the evidence of fraud before affirming
 9 and certifying the Judgment as enforceable abroad. The
 10 breach was immediate.
 11 As Professor Böckstiegel wrote for the Commercial
 12 Cases Tribunal claims of breach of Article II(7), and I
 13 will quote, "they're not subject to the same strict
 14 requirement of exhaustion as claims for breach of customary
 15 international law," and he added that "the decision of a
 16 lower court may in certain circumstances directly violate
 17 BIT provisions." And where, if not here. The time to
 18 provide an effective remedy was before the Judgment was
 19 allowed to set sail to the four corners of the earth. The
 20 window of opportunity was gone, the genie out of the
 21 bottle, and further recourse in Ecuador could not bring it
 22 back. Contrary to Ecuador's argument, there was no need
 23 for Article II(7) to expressly waive the exhaustion
 24 requirement established under customary international law.
 25 To the extent that there is exhaustion element, it comes

11:50 1 form the nature of Article II(7)'s command itself, as
 2 applied to the specific circumstances which, of course, are
 3 a matter for the Tribunal to judge.
 4 Ecuador's judicial conduct also breached other
 5 obligations in the BIT. Claimants have explained in their
 6 written submissions that Ecuador breached the obligations
 7 of fair and equitable treatment, full protection and
 8 security, and non-discrimination, such as, for example, the
 9 100 PPM/TPH remediation standard. You can see our full
 10 arguments on this score in our Track 2 amended Reply,
 11 Paragraphs 333 to 357, Track 2 supplemental Reply,
 12 Paragraphs 393 to 407.
 13 In short, the conduct of the judicial system here
 14 plainly violates customary international law, and the
 15 breaches of Article II(7), fair and equitable treatment,
 16 and the other treaty provisions follow a fortiori.
 17 I thank you very much for your attention, and this
 18 is our moment for a break, I believe.
 19 MR. BISHOP: Mr. President, we're in the
 20 Tribunal's hands. We could do--we could move forward in
 21 one of two ways. We could either take our lunch break now,
 22 which we are happy to do if the Tribunal would like that,
 23 or we could perhaps go to one other topic, which is
 24 Ms. Renfroe's discussion of the environmental case put
 25 forward by the Respondent, so we could either do that and

11:51 1 then break for lunch or we could break for lunch now,
 2 however the Tribunal wishes to proceed.
 3 PRESIDENT VEEDER: It's a little bit early for
 4 lunch. The clock says ten to 12:00. How long would
 5 Ms. Renfroe take?
 6 MR. BISHOP: I think she plans on probably a
 7 little more than 30 minutes, but perhaps we could take a
 8 five-minute break before that, if you don't mind, to set
 9 up.
 10 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Let's take a five-minute break,
 11 and then we will go to the next section. Thank you.
 12 (Brief recess.)
 13 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Ms. Renfroe.
 14 MS. RENFROE: Thank you very much, Members of the
 15 Tribunal.
 16 I turn now to the discussion of the environmental
 17 evidence and use it to illustrate several important aspects
 18 about the absurdity of this Judgment.
 19 Certainly, the damage awards of the Judgment are
 20 not the only example of how this Judgment is absurd. One
 21 could point to the causation element or the lack of
 22 causation analysis in the Judgment as an equally absurd
 23 feature of it, but for now this morning I'd like to focus
 24 my discussion on the damage components because I think,
 25 standing alone, they illustrate perhaps one of the most

11:59 1 shocking examples of why this Judgment is, indeed, so
 2 absurd on its face.
 3 And so, I take you back to a slide that was
 4 presented by John Connor, Claimants' environmental expert,
 5 during his presentation in which he summarized those key
 6 Awards in the Judgment and noted that \$3 billion or more of
 7 the damages awarded in the Judgment had absolutely no basis
 8 expressed in the Judgment. Those would include the
 9 groundwater remediation Award, the Award for potable water
 10 systems to be replaced, the community--the healthcare
 11 monitoring system Award, and then the healthcare program
 12 for cancer care--no basis in the Judgment whatsoever.
 13 The other Awards in the Judgment that purported to
 14 have some basis, when analyzed we know from the record that
 15 there was no legitimate basis in the record for them.
 16 And we know that because of the, among other
 17 things, the testimony in this Hearing from Claimants' array
 18 of highly qualified oil field petroleum experts whose
 19 testimony I've summarized again for your convenience.
 20 Many of them or several of them you had the
 21 opportunity to meet in the last few weeks, and I think you
 22 can judge for yourself their experience, their credibility,
 23 and the quality of the scientific analysis they brought to
 24 bear to support their conclusions that there is no
 25 scientific basis for the Judgment as a whole or any of the

12:01 1 damage awards contained in it.
 2 I want to review for you, however, five of the
 3 gentlemen or experts who you did not have an opportunity to
 4 hear from in the last few weeks but whose testimony you
 5 certainly have, and the contribution they make to this
 6 conclusion that there is no scientific basis that supports
 7 these damage awards.
 8 We start with that of Dr. Bill Bellamy, who
 9 observes and who's testified that there is no drinking
 10 water contamination from TexPet's petroleum operations and,
 11 therefore, no support for the Judgment's Award of
 12 \$150 million to replace community water systems.
 13 In fact, not only was this opinion not
 14 controverted by the Lago Plaintiffs in the Lago Litigation,
 15 but it's not controverted even in this arbitration case
 16 now.
 17 Then there is the opinion of Dr. Suresh
 18 Moolgavkar, a renowned epidemiologist, who is the only
 19 Expert in this arbitration case to have published a
 20 peer-reviewed mortality study analyzing mortality data from
 21 the Concession Area; and, based on that study, he concludes
 22 that there is no statistical significant relationship, much
 23 less any causal relationship between exposure to TexPet's
 24 operations and any sort of human health risk.
 25 And then we have the testimony of Dr. Pedro

12:02 1 Alvarez, another gentleman you didn't have a chance to
 2 meet, but who has explained in his Expert Report the impact
 3 of Petroecuador's last 25 years of operations. And the
 4 fact that its operations from both the perspective of its
 5 expansion as well as its numerous spills and releases, how
 6 those impacts have irrevocably changed the face of this oil
 7 field in a way that makes it absolutely impossible to go
 8 back and reconstruct what it was like in June of 1990, when
 9 it was handed over.
 10 That, of course, is very significant on one's
 11 consideration of the causation factor and the fact that the
 12 Lago Court made no effort to deal with a critical causation
 13 question.
 14 And then we have two more opinions bearing on the
 15 ecosystem factors, and those are Dr. Robert Wasserstrom and
 16 Dr. Douglas Southgate, both of whom were experts in the
 17 Lago Case, and both of whom testified to factors that bore
 18 on ecological impacts, that those factors were driven by
 19 the Government of Ecuador's policies to promote
 20 agricultural development and population growth in the area,
 21 not by oil field operations.
 22 So, perhaps the most important of these
 23 illustrations of why the damages award is so absurd, it has
 24 to do with the soil and groundwater remediation Awards that
 25 amount to over \$6 billion. Perhaps you will remember, or

12:04 1 at least I hope you will, the testimony of Dr. Robert
 2 Hinchee who was here last Friday, I believe, and who
 3 explained to you based on his widespread experience in
 4 actual real oil field contamination cases, that the damage
 5 award of \$6 billion from the Lago Court to remediate soil
 6 and groundwater has absolutely no bearing to reality.
 7 And to illustrate that point, he shared with you
 8 he shared with you his experience with the Kuwaiti oil
 9 field, where Saddam Hussein had ordered the intentional
 10 destruction of those oil fields, and there the most that
 11 was ordered for the remediation of over 350 square
 12 kilometers was \$2.5 billion.
 13 You will remember also Dr. Hinchee's comparison of
 14 the square kilometers to be remediated in the Kuwait oil
 15 fields, and he compared it to the total amount to be
 16 remediated according to the Judgment. And look at the
 17 difference: 385 square kilometers in Kuwait versus 3.1
 18 square kilometers in the Concession Area. Just think about
 19 that difference in the amount of area allegedly to be
 20 remediated, and look at the difference in the price tag.
 21 You simply cannot support a \$6 billion cost when you take
 22 into account the area to be addressed.
 23 And then if you look at it, if you compare these
 24 numbers on the cost per square meter or cubic meter for
 25 remediation, in Kuwait, where it was actually done, \$45 per

12:06 1 cubic meter compared to the Judgment Award that would
 2 amount to \$730 per cubic meter.
 3 Now, if we think about this a little more closely,
 4 and we look at the elements that went into this soil and
 5 groundwater remediation Award, and we then assess it or
 6 measure it against reality, and that reality is very clear
 7 and undisputed, it's the reality of what Petroecuador does
 8 in the Concession Area today. It actually remediates in
 9 the Concession Area soil, though not groundwater because
 10 groundwater is rarely, if ever, impacted by oil field
 11 operations.
 12 But if you remember the slide presented to you by
 13 Dr. Hinchee, he sums up as concisely as anyone could the
 14 departure from reality wrought by this Judgment.
 15 And when you actually look at the \$70 million cost
 16 estimate published by the PEPDA program for what it would
 17 cost to remediate both former Concession liabilities of
 18 Petroecuador as well as post-1990 liabilities of
 19 Petroecuador, so from two different operating eras,
 20 Petroecuador's estimate as published by PEPDA, I believe,
 21 in 2009 in Hinchee Exhibit Number 1, that estimate was
 22 \$70 million. And it included remediation not only of
 23 soils, but sediments as well. And when you compare that to
 24 the \$6 billion Award, you will find a 90 times
 25 exaggeration. The Lago Award of \$6 billion is 90 times

12:08 1 what has been estimated by Petroecuador that is actually
 2 needed to deal with Petroecuador's liabilities. That
 3 alone, Members of the Tribunal, is a profound absurdity.
 4 It illustrates that this Judgment, on its face, is nothing
 5 less than absurd. And that's just one example.
 6 Now, we go to the health Awards, and they are
 7 equally lacking in any technical or scientific basis. When
 8 you consider what evidence was in the Lago record that
 9 could possibly have justified Awards of over \$2 billion for
 10 health-related costs, it's shocking to see what we find.
 11 On this slide, I've summarized the evidence that was in the
 12 Lago record placed there by Chevron. Unfortunately, there
 13 is no comparison placed there by the Lago Plaintiffs, and
 14 to the extent that they put anything in the Lago Record, it
 15 does not survive any kind of scientific rigor or scrutiny.
 16 Let me just review for you the fact that it was
 17 Chevron in the Lago Case; that was the Party who bothered
 18 to sample the drinking water sources during all the
 19 Judicial Inspections. That's not something that the Lago
 20 Plaintiffs even bothered to do.
 21 It was also Chevron who was the only party who
 22 performed a quantitative human health-risk assessment. You
 23 heard Dr. McHugh tell you about that. He was the Expert
 24 who did it. There was no equivalent risk assessment
 25 performed by the Lago Plaintiffs. And it was Chevron who

12:10 1 commissioned and put in the Lago Record the only study of
 2 ecological risks as well as the only study of impacts on
 3 biodiversity. Those studies and those reports in the Lago
 4 Agrio Record stand alone to demonstrate that TexPet's
 5 operations did not present a human health risk or a risk to
 6 the environment. And there was no offsetting evidence of
 7 any validity, of any legitimacy from the Lago Plaintiffs.
 8 And so, when you look at this collectively, you can see
 9 there simply was no basis for the staggering human health
 10 Awards issued by the Lago Court.
 11 So, now we turn to the question of whether LBG,
 12 Ecuador's new after-the-fact experts who were not involved
 13 in the Lago Case, we turn to the fact or the question of
 14 whether they can endorse this Judgment or whether they can
 15 somehow rescue it. The answer, respectfully, Members of
 16 the Tribunal, is that while they endorse it in form, they
 17 do not endorse it with any scientific substance whatsoever.
 18 I've summarized on this slide for you as concisely
 19 as I can the essence of their testimony and why I say,
 20 notwithstanding the four volumes of reports they have
 21 submitted, they simply do not offer any scientific support
 22 for this Judgment. It begins with the fact that they don't
 23 even endorse the monetary Awards. They told you here
 24 earlier this week, they didn't make any attempt to evaluate
 25 causation or attribute liability or apportion liability,

12:11 1 even though they recognized that Petroecuador had operated
 2 these oil fields for 25 years. And even though they
 3 recognized numerous spills had occurred throughout the
 4 Concession Area, knowing that, they nevertheless made no
 5 attempt whatsoever to try to apportion liability.
 6 And on the many questions I asked them about what
 7 evidence they had on the extent of sediment impacts,
 8 groundwater impacts, impacts to drinking water, or the
 9 extent of impacts to soil at any given site, they had no
 10 opinion. It's quite amazing when you consider the volume
 11 of reports they have submitted, but here is their testimony
 12 that you heard on Monday of this week: They had no
 13 opinion.
 14 They did venture an opinion that contamination as
 15 they define it is anything over a detection limit, but they
 16 had to admit that the matter of what constitutes an
 17 actionable impact is a matter of law for which they offered
 18 no opinion as we would expect. But what they also had to
 19 concede was that they were not applying Ecuador's own oil
 20 field regulation, Decree 1215, or the RAOH, as we sometimes
 21 call it. They simply put that aside and didn't apply it in
 22 forming their conclusions.
 23 And so, I caution you that to the extent that you
 24 consider their Reports and their use of the word
 25 "contamination," please recognize that that is a conclusion

12:13 1 they've made that completely departs from Ecuador's own
 2 legal criteria for oil field operations.
 3 And so, instead of supporting this Judgment with
 4 evidence from the Lago Record and mainstream widely
 5 accepted scientific protocols, what did they do? Well, a
 6 bit reminiscent of what Steven Donziger did, as he told us,
 7 "When the facts do not exist, facts are created." And what
 8 we find with the LBG team is that they've completely
 9 departed from accepted protocols in trying to fashion some
 10 sort of a defense to this Judgment.
 11 I point out for you the photographs that LBG
 12 provided in their Reports, but under examination they had
 13 to admit that these photographs do not represent areas
 14 remediated by TexPet or RAP areas. Instead, what they told
 15 us was that they purposefully targeted non-RAP areas and
 16 were really oblivious to where the RAP and non-RAP areas
 17 were. They didn't concern themselves with that distinction
 18 very much. And to the extent that they did sample in RAP
 19 areas, you didn't hear one example from them this week that
 20 they found a location that TexPet had remediated; i.e., a
 21 RAP feature, for which they found any problem. You didn't
 22 hear anything about that.
 23 And the facts are, Members of the Tribunal, that
 24 of the 13 sites where they actually took samples, they
 25 sampled only four RAP locations. Only four. But we didn't

12:15 1 see any pictures or any drawings or diagrams about any
 2 problems with those four. Instead, what we saw are
 3 photographs like these that come from non-RAP areas.
 4 So, moving then to a second reason that the LBG
 5 work simply deserves no weight and does nothing to prop up
 6 this Judgment is their departure or their failure to follow
 7 Ecuador's own oil field regulations, Decree 1215. You
 8 heard a lot about that on Monday. The facts are, as I
 9 tried to draw out from them, that when you do apply Decree
 10 1215, Ecuador's own oil field regulations, we find that
 11 many, many of the places that LBG contends to be
 12 "contaminated" would require no action, no remediation
 13 under Ecuador's own system.
 14 So, the fact that LBG and the Republic of Ecuador
 15 refused to apply even their own oil field regulations
 16 governing oil field operations and which are designed to
 17 protect the environment in oil field areas, the fact that
 18 they don't apply those is shocking. It's just impossible
 19 to reconcile it with any intellectual honesty. And so
 20 that's the second reason I urge you to conclude they do
 21 nothing to support this Judgment, and their conclusions
 22 deserve no weight.
 23 To remind you of the effect of their failure to
 24 apply Ecuador's own environmental regulations, I bring you
 25 back to a graphic presented by Mr. Connor where, on the

12:17 1 left, he took a map that was provided by LBG, and he shows
 2 the sample locations that LBG says are, "contaminated."
 3 And then on the right, Mr. Connor demonstrated for us that
 4 when you apply Decree 1215, in this case it's agricultural
 5 criteria of 2500 parts per million, that all but one of
 6 those sampling locations require no action. The Government
 7 of Ecuador and Petroecuador would take no action because
 8 under Ecuador's regime, 2500 parts per million of TPH is
 9 permissible to remain in soils in agricultural areas.
 10 Another illustration of this we see at the
 11 Shushufindi 25 well platform where again, Mr. Connor was
 12 making the point that there is great agreement between the
 13 JI data that he analyzed on the left and the LBG data that
 14 they collected recently, when you apply the same Decree
 15 1215 criteria. So, when you compare apples to apples in
 16 defining what constitutes an impact that needs remediation,
 17 when you do that, you will see that these Parties found
 18 essentially the same thing. They sampled in the same areas
 19 and got essentially the same results.
 20 And yet, LBG continues to urge you to find
 21 widespread contamination throughout the Concession Area,
 22 which they attribute to TexPet, even though they've made no
 23 attempt to analyze causation.
 24 And then I want to take you to this example, which
 25 I found perhaps one of the most dramatic of all

<p>Sheet 32</p> <p style="text-align: right;">2619</p> <p>12:19 1 illustrations of how LBG cannot demonstrate any support for 2 the Judgment using its approach. They showed you this 3 photograph, as did the Republic of Ecuador in opening, this 4 hand-dug well used by a family; and, on their slide, they 5 told you the residents at Lago 16 used contaminated water 6 when drinking, bathing, and washing their clothes. 7 And this was not the only photograph like this 8 they showed you, but under cross-examination, Dr. Garvey 9 had to acknowledge that his own data showed that when you 10 applied Ecuador's TULAS regulations, this water well, this 11 hand-dug well, met not only Ecuador's groundwater 12 regulations, but it also meets Ecuador's drinking water 13 criteria under TULAS. 14 So, I urge the Tribunal to beware, when you were 15 shown photographs during Ecuador's closing as I suspect you 16 will be, remember this photograph and others like it where 17 the word "contamination" is used, but the data doesn't 18 prove it. 19 Now I go to a third example of LBG's extraordinary 20 measures to try and support this Judgment. You may remember 21 in opening and then again during LBG's presentation this 22 week, they showed you this drawing, and this map from the 23 Sacha 13 well site has been annotated to show a calculation 24 that Dr. Garvey created. His calculation was taking the 25 Judicial Inspection soil data, developing an average, and</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">2621</p> <p>12:23 1 And I asked him whether he had any data that would 2 validate his model, and you will see here his answer to my 3 question: "Do you have any data here that would confirm 4 your model, or you don't have it, do you?" And he said: 5 "No." And you may remember that I walked him around the 6 Shushufindi 34 well site where he had collected data, and 7 none of those samples conformed to his predictions in his 8 model. 9 So, this is another example of LBG's work really 10 being nothing less than just some smoke and mirrors to try 11 and add some weight to this Judgment, and it does not 12 survive any kind of scientific rigor or scrutiny. 13 I take you now to another problem with that 14 calculation, readily admitted by Dr. Garvey. It took no 15 account of the fact that much of the--many of the Judicial 16 Inspection sites were measuring contamination in the soils 17 from Petroecuador's operations. He acknowledged that he 18 had made no attempt to separate that out. 19 And here I showed him this photograph, and you may 20 remember I asked him: "In developing your calculation, did 21 you make any deductions for the oil that was spilled in 22 these various sites by Petroecuador?" 23 Answer: "No, we did not." 24 And then we talked about the fact that, according 25 to Petroecuador's own public records, the SIPAS database,</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">2620</p> <p>12:21 1 extrapolating that to assume that all 344 Concession Area 2 sites would be equally contaminated. But what he didn't 3 tell you was, but I did, or he acknowledged it under 4 cross-examination was that, Number 1, that he relied upon 5 soil samples from a Petroecuador spill at the Sacha 13 well 6 site to form the basis of developing his average. 7 Number 2, we learned that all of the contamination 8 that he declared to constitute six Exxon Valdezes, all of 9 that contamination, that so-called "contamination," if you 10 applied Ecuador's Decree 1215 criteria, it would all be 11 below the agricultural standard for TPH. 12 And then we took the step of examining--well, 13 before I move there, let me also remind you of the 14 testimony by Mr. Connor, who tried to explain the flaws in 15 this calculation, and he illustrated for you that the oil 16 that Dr. Garvey fictionalizes to exist in 200-meter 17 diameters from each of these Platforms simply does not 18 exist when you look at the data. It exists nowhere but in 19 Dr. Garvey's calculation, as Mr. Connor told you. 20 But then, if you remember I asked Dr. Garvey if he 21 could ground-truth his model, that is, test it against the 22 data, because, after all, as he acknowledged, data is what 23 we should make decisions by. It is the gold standard. And 24 as between data and a model or a calculation, there is no 25 question that the data governs.</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">2622</p> <p>12:24 1 through 2009, 125,000 barrels of oil had been reported to 2 be spilled throughout the Concession Area, and again, LBG 3 has taken no account of this. 4 But we do know, and Dr. Garvey and LBG had to 5 acknowledge, as did Dr. Strauss, that the Petroecuador 6 operations over the last 25 years have indeed been, very, 7 very extensive. I showed you this image in opening, the 8 screenshot from the mapping tool where the green icons 9 represent the TexPet wells, and if I can draw your 10 attention to the screen, the red icons representing the 11 Petroecuador wells drilled since 1990. And if you just 12 compare, if you go back and forth, what you can do when you 13 open the mapping tool, you will see the dramatic 14 comparison, the dramatic expansion of Petroecuador's 15 operations in the last 25 years. 16 Now, we know from observations by Pablo Fajardo in 17 statements he made before he joined the Lago Agrio 18 Plaintiffs' team, that Petroecuador had, indeed, caused 19 more damage and far more disasters than Texaco, and quoting 20 him: "There are frequent spills and broken pipes and 21 contamination of wetlands, of rivers, of streams in great 22 magnitude. But since it's a State-owned company, no one 23 says a thing," quoting Pablo Fajardo. And I've shown you 24 just two of the images that you saw in the last few weeks 25 that are examples, they are photographs of Petroecuador</p>

12:26 1 impacts in the Concession Area.
 2 Now, I want to make another point, taking you back
 3 to the mapping tool, C-2444, and this has to do with the
 4 dramatic expansion that we find in the Concession Area.
 5 This is the Shushufindi 40 Well Platform, and I'm showing
 6 you an image on the left from the Year 2000, 10 years after
 7 Petroecuador had been operating. The red circle on the
 8 left is the well platform as it existed in 2000.
 9 Now, if you look closely on the right-hand side,
 10 you will see the platform, and you can see in the brown
 11 sort of scarred area, the expansion of that platform, and
 12 what you're looking at, Members of the Tribunal, is a
 13 150-pit pit farm that has been constructed by Petroecuador
 14 since 2000. Again, when you go into the mapping tool and
 15 you toggle through each year, you can see the evolution and
 16 the progression of changes.
 17 It's a little bit hard to see in this slide, but
 18 when you look at it carefully, you will see in the upper
 19 portion what looks like little cells. Those are pits that
 20 Petroecuador has constructed recently. This is just but
 21 one example of one site where there has been dramatic
 22 expansion.
 23 Now, I want to show you an image as I move forward
 24 with my observations about LBG and why their work deserves
 25 no weight and why it in no way validates the Judgment.

12:28 1 Like those photographs that we were shown declaring
 2 contamination where the data didn't support it, LBG showed
 3 you this image from their slide presentation. We hadn't
 4 seen this before. This was new. It was not included in
 5 their Expert Reports. And in this image, they purported to
 6 suggest that there are stream impacts throughout the
 7 Concession Area that caused them concern. We certainly
 8 recognized that stream impacts can be concerning and can be
 9 of concern and should be taken seriously, but the point I
 10 want to make to you now is that Dr. Garvey admitted "we
 11 don't have the details as to where it might be impacted."
 12 And you can see his testimony there.
 13 So, what he did was to present to you this image
 14 suggesting that all of the red streams within the
 15 Concession Area are contaminated, but even he acknowledged
 16 he really didn't know.
 17 But, Members of the Tribunal, in the Slide 137 A
 18 that I have just handed out, I want to direct your
 19 attention to something that Dr. Garvey did not share with
 20 you, and that is that we actually do know quite a bit about
 21 the condition and quality of the streams and the surface
 22 water in the Concession Area. On this image, I have taken
 23 Dr. Garvey's map and I've annotated it with information
 24 from three Environmental Impact Assessments that were
 25 commissioned by Petroecuador very recently. They're all in

12:29 1 this record. And what I've annotated here is the fact that
 2 these three reports include surface-water sampling results,
 3 in three--in these various oilfields.
 4 So, for example, in the Shushufindi Aguarico
 5 field, which is Number 2 on the map, there is an
 6 Environmental Impact Assessment that reports that the vast
 7 majority of surface water and sediment samples meet
 8 Ecuadorian standards for TPH. Now, that is not to say that
 9 there aren't impacts from Petroecuador's operations and, in
 10 fact, I have shown you some those in the last few weeks.
 11 We recognize that those are there, but what I do think is
 12 very important to the Tribunal to recognize is that
 13 Petroecuador and other organizations actually monitor the
 14 quality of surface water within the Concession Area. And
 15 so I urge the Tribunal to take great caution as you listen
 16 to and consider what may be presented in the Republic's
 17 closing about what Dr. Garvey has found because as we can
 18 see from this map, he has actually found nothing about the
 19 condition of the stream system.
 20 Now I will move on quickly to the question about
 21 Dr. Strauss and the health risks and whether she can do
 22 anything to rescue the Judgment. You may remember the
 23 testimony of Dr. Strauss last Friday. And again, with all
 24 due respect to her, she brings absolutely no support, no
 25 scientific support whatsoever to bolster the healthcare

12:31 1 awards in the Judgment. On their face, they, too, are
 2 absurd, and she did nothing to demonstrate otherwise.
 3 Again, on this slide, for your convenience, I have
 4 summarized her key--the key admissions that she made. Even
 5 as limited as her opinions are, we found that she backed
 6 away from many of them or she simply couldn't address
 7 critical points.
 8 She performed her risk assessment, her
 9 quantitative health risk assessment as if the Settlement
 10 Agreement and Remedial Action Plan had never occurred. She
 11 made no effort to differentiate between impacts from
 12 Petroecuador as opposed to those from TexPet. They didn't
 13 even try to do that.
 14 And then you might have heard that she also
 15 disregarded Petroecuador's operations throughout. She
 16 wasn't satisfied to calculate health risk using widely
 17 accepted EPA approaches. She did it that way in 2014 but
 18 not in 2015. Instead, she resorted to having to make up
 19 her own toxicity factor in trying to calculate a human
 20 health risk. Why would anyone do that? Only because using
 21 widely accepted published toxicity values, she could not
 22 calculate a risk to human health.
 23 And then we also saw how she used unprecedented
 24 TEM data to assess health risk. Similarly, she, too,
 25 disregarded Ecuador's own Decree 1215 Regulatory Cleanup

12:33 1 Criteria, she paid no attention to those. Even though
 2 purportedly the question she was trying to answer was
 3 whether remediation was needed.
 4 You then will recall the testimony from
 5 Dr. Greg Douglas about the problems with the data that she
 6 relied upon, key data that she relied upon for her
 7 calculations has reliability problems because it's got
 8 blank contamination as well as many samples are simply
 9 plant matter.
 10 So, now I move to the question of cancer, and
 11 while Dr. Strauss purported to do some cancer-risk
 12 calculations for future risk, I'm going to address those in
 13 a minute, but here I want to reflect a moment about the
 14 epidemiologic evidence. I told you earlier that
 15 Dr. Moolgavkar was the only Expert in this arbitration
 16 case, the only epidemiologist, who's published any kind of
 17 peer-reviewed study, and I've highlighted his key
 18 conclusion at the top of the page.
 19 But his finding about the lack of any association
 20 between exposure to petroleum in the Concession Area and
 21 any human health risks or health impacts, his finding is
 22 actually consistent with other evidence that was in the
 23 Lago Record during the Lago Case, some of which I have
 24 summarized on this slide.
 25 No excess cancer or cancer mortality in the

12:35 1 they're speaking only of taste and odor, which has nothing
 2 to do with whether the drinking water is safe.
 3 Now, I want to return to Dr. Strauss's
 4 calculations just briefly. You may remember that we walked
 5 through this diagram, this chart from her 2014 Report.
 6 This was her non-cancer risk calculation in which most of
 7 the cells are white and recall that she admitted the white
 8 cells show absolutely no risk, no harm, nothing to worry
 9 about, not even a cause for any concern.
 10 She also eventually acknowledged that even the
 11 pink cells and the orange cells were just areas where
 12 further evaluation may be needed. The red cells were the
 13 only ones that she indicated any concern for.
 14 But now what I've done is I've distilled from her
 15 three the quantitative risk assessments, I've distilled
 16 them on this slide, and what did she really find?
 17 Well, she calculated--now, bear in mind, this is a
 18 calculation of theoretical health risk. Undisputed, she
 19 did not find any actual health impacts. No one did. But
 20 in terms of her calculation of a theoretical health risk,
 21 she finds--she calculates such risk at nine sites, all of
 22 which are non-RAP locations, all of which are non-RAP
 23 locations.
 24 But even those nine sites--let's look at them a
 25 little more closely.

12:34 1 village of San Carlos according to Arana and Arellano and
 2 according to Rourke, TexPet's operations did not cause
 3 anyone to get cancer.
 4 And then to the extent that Dr. San Sebastian's
 5 work has been mischaracterized, he corrected it or he
 6 corrected any misinterpretation and observed that his
 7 Reports and his studies had been misinterpreted.
 8 Turning to the question of drinking water, which
 9 is obviously an important feature or component in
 10 evaluating health risk, here we have no dispute of any
 11 kind. We know from the JI data, 520 drinking water samples
 12 were collected and 98 percent of those meet World Health
 13 Organization and USEPA Standards for drinking water.
 14 They also meet Ecuador's own standards for
 15 drinking water criteria. And on this point, I want to be
 16 very clear, I'm talking about primary standards for
 17 drinking water that determine what water is safe to drink
 18 and what is not. Across the board the JI data shows that
 19 the water in the Concession Area is safe to drink. That
 20 was also the finding by LBG as to the four drinking water
 21 sources they sampled when they were in the field, and I've
 22 got an excerpt of their data.
 23 To the extent that you heard any opinion or have
 24 read any opinion by Dr. Strauss or LBG in their Reports
 25 that there is a violation of drinking water standards,

12:37 1 Of the nine, they break down with eight being
 2 future exposure scenarios. That is, she's assumed that
 3 someone would be exposed to something in a swamp in the
 4 future, even though today no one uses the swamp, and there
 5 is no water well in the swamp, but she made assumptions
 6 that this oilfield would be used for more residential
 7 purposes in the future.
 8 And so that leaves us with one, only one scenario,
 9 where she calculated a current human health risk, and that
 10 was from the Shushufindi 13 Well Platform. And you may
 11 remember this, but if you would indulge me, I would like to
 12 remind you, that when I presented to her the fact that
 13 Dr. Short had concluded that the one sample from the one
 14 pit that she was relying upon to calculate human health
 15 risk, that Dr. Short, Respondent's Expert, analytical
 16 chemist, he had concluded that that sample was from oil
 17 that had been released within the last year. So that could
 18 only have been Petroecuador, and Dr. Short's Report is on
 19 this Slide 2014 at Page 15.
 20 So, that leaves us with the conclusion that
 21 Dr. Strauss was not able to calculate any human health
 22 risk, theoretical human health risk at any RAP location,
 23 and even where she does find one, it's all in the future
 24 with the one exception, and that exception falls at the
 25 feet of Petroecuador.

12:39 1 So, then, to summarize collectively the work and
 2 the flaws of LBG and Dr. Strauss together, this slide does
 3 that. Some of these points I have covered for you. But
 4 when I told you in Opening Statement that Ecuador's Experts
 5 had to depart from widely accepted protocols to try and
 6 fashion some support for this Judgment, these are examples
 7 of what I was talking about. And only by doing this are
 8 they able to even attempt to support this Judgment, but as
 9 I said, under any real scientific scrutiny, their effort
 10 fails.
 11 So, that brings me to my conclusion that there is
 12 a manifest absurdity in the damage awards in the Judgment
 13 and in the Judgment itself to the extent that no causation
 14 analysis is provided. And so, as I conclude, I bring you
 15 back to the most compelling illustration of that, and that
 16 is Dr. Hinchee's chart in which he shows you how badly the
 17 soil and groundwater remediation awards in the Judgment
 18 depart from reality, more than 90 times what is actually
 19 done in Ecuador today by Petroecuador.
 20 So, Members of the Tribunal, I conclude with the
 21 observation that the damage awards in this Judgment cannot
 22 be supported with the environmental evidence that was in
 23 the Lago Record, nor can they be supported in any sense of
 24 the word with the new information that has been provided by
 25 LBG, Dr. Strauss, and Ecuador's other Environmental

1 AFTERNOON SESSION
 2 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Let's resume.
 3 Before we give the floor back to the Claimants, we
 4 understand that the current draft of the Site Visit Order
 5 is agreed, but we don't have the security protocol.
 6 What is the position about that missing annex?
 7 MS. RENFROE: Mr. President, we were speaking
 8 about it with our client over the lunch hour. We have one
 9 more phone call to make, and I think that we'll be in a
 10 position by tomorrow, early tomorrow, to represent that we
 11 have all the important details worked out. We certainly
 12 are aware that you would very much like to have it
 13 completed by tomorrow.
 14 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Is the Attorney General here
 15 tomorrow?
 16 ATTORNEY GENERAL GARCIA CARRION: Yes.
 17 PRESIDENT VEEDER: What we're going to do because
 18 we struggled so much with this document is that we're going
 19 to give you copies during the next break, and if it's
 20 agreeable, could you please just initial to the extent it's
 21 agreeable, so that we at least have that under our belt.
 22 And then tomorrow we'll look at the security protocol, and
 23 then we can add that in if that's agreed, and then we could
 24 formally issue the order and have it countersigned. Can we
 25 do that?

12:40 1 Experts. There is simply no support for these damage
 2 awards, and they are patently absurd on their face.
 3 Thank you.
 4 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you very much.
 5 We will break now for the lunch break. We will
 6 come back at quarter to 2:00.
 7 Over this lunch break, if the Parties could look
 8 at the draft Site Visit Order, and before the end of the
 9 lunch break, approach the Tribunal's Secretary to see if
 10 there is any changes we need to make to the wording, we
 11 need to complete an annex, we would very much like by this
 12 evening to issue this Order signed and countersigned.
 13 The other matter is we have questions. They have
 14 arisen as you have been speaking to us. We thought it
 15 appropriate not to interrupt you, but you may assume that
 16 at the end of your presentation today, you will have a
 17 number of questions. You may have answered them, which is
 18 one reason for keeping quiet at the moment, but if you
 19 don't, we will raise them with you at that time. So, we
 20 come back in an hour plus.
 21 (Whereupon, at 12:41 p.m., the hearing was
 22 adjourned until 1:45 p.m., the same day.)
 23
 24
 25

01:47 1 MS. RENFROE: Yes, sir, we can. Thank you.
 2 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Respondents, too?
 3 MR. BLOOM: Yes, that's fine.
 4 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Okay, well during the next
 5 break, you'll be given copies by our Secretary. Please
 6 just initial them. At least we've moved on.
 7 Nothing else, so we will give the floor back to
 8 the Claimants.
 9 Mr. Bishop.
 10 MR. BISHOP: Thank you, Mr. President.
 11 This brings us to the factual discussion of the
 12 evidence of fraud and corruption, but before going into
 13 that, I want to answer one of the Tribunal's questions. I
 14 think Mr. Coriell had answered one that was on Slide 148
 15 already.
 16 There was a second one that the Tribunal asked
 17 with respect to my reference in the opening statement to
 18 Donziger's words about having gone over to the dark side.
 19 What you find in Slide 149 is a portion of Mr. Donziger's
 20 diary where he makes that statement. And let me give you
 21 the context of this very quickly.
 22 At this point, Donziger made a deal with Gustavo
 23 Pinto and Fernando Reyes, and this is all set forth in the
 24 Witness Statement or the Declaration of Mr. Reyes, which
 25 you have in this case, but what he did was he hired

01:48 1 Fernando Reyes and Gustavo Pinto to act as monitors of the
 2 Court-appointed independent settling Experts during the
 3 Judicial Inspections. He held them out as being
 4 independent, but he made a deal with them to secretly pay
 5 them, which was the forerunner of the pattern you saw later
 6 with Cabrera where he secretly paid Cabrera and held him
 7 out as independent. He was doing something similar here,
 8 and this is his statement in his diary, "feel like I have
 9 gone over to the dark side." So, that's what I was
 10 referencing in my Opening Statement, and you have the
 11 source here on Slide 149.

12 Now, the Plaintiffs' claims of fraud and
 13 corruption fall broadly into three main factual categories:
 14 The Cabrera fraud, which you've heard quite a lot about and
 15 which is now admitted; the ghostwriting of the Court orders
 16 in the Lago Agrio Case by Mr. Guerra, who was being paid by
 17 the Plaintiffs to do so in order to advance their case;
 18 and, of course, the Judgment fraud and corruption in which
 19 Judge Zambrano was bribed by the Plaintiffs in order to be
 20 able to ghostwrite his opinion, which they did.

21 In the past three weeks, you've heard the
 22 testimony of Claimants' Witnesses and Experts, and I have
 23 put up some of those gentlemen on the Board on Slide 151,
 24 but in contrast in these three weeks, you have not heard a
 25 coherent factual case from Ecuador, and so Claimants' case

01:51 1 and forget to give you the source. You'll find them right
 2 there on this slide.

3 Instead, Ecuador, in fact, has tried to distance
 4 itself from each of those actors, saying it doesn't defend
 5 their conduct, effectively acknowledging the illegality of
 6 that conduct in the Lago Agrio Case.

7 So, who did you hear from in the past three weeks?
 8 You heard from Mr. Guerra because we brought him. You
 9 didn't, however, hear from Judge Zambrano because Ecuador
 10 didn't bring him to the case, so you didn't hear him rebut
 11 any of the testimony you heard from Mr. Guerra.

12 You did hear, however, from Dr. Robert Leonard,
 13 who testified before you that he found at least six of the
 14 Plaintiffs' internal documents were plagiarized in the
 15 Judgment, and Ecuador has no counter expert to offer in
 16 response to Dr. Leonard.

17 We have brought you the expert reports of
 18 Dr. Gerald McMenamin who testified that in his opinion, the
 19 judgment probably had multiple authors, and Zambrano had
 20 very little input to it. Ecuador did not call
 21 Dr. McMenamin for cross-examination, and they have no
 22 counter expert to him.

23 You also heard from Spencer Lynch. He testified
 24 that the Guerra computer contained drafts of Ecuadorian
 25 court orders that were later issued by Judge Zambrano, in

01:50 1 and its experts stands largely rebutted. Ecuador has no
 2 alternative narrative to explain how or why the Plaintiffs'
 3 internal documents were copied into the Judgment. The RICO
 4 Defendants had no explanation for that. Mr. Zambrano at
 5 the RICO trial had no explanation for that, and Ecuador has
 6 no explanation. They had no explanation for where in the
 7 Court Record you can find any of these Plaintiffs'
 8 documents.

9 Now, instead, all you've heard are disjointed and
 10 sometimes inconsistent excuses that do not in any way
 11 explain the fraud and corruption that occurred. If Ecuador
 12 had any reasonable alternative story to the evidence that
 13 we put forward, it could have brought you direct evidence.
 14 It could have put on the stand any of these people: Pablo
 15 Fajardo, Judge Zambrano, Steven Donziger, Luis Yánza or
 16 Richard Cabrera, but it's not provided you with testimony
 17 from any of those people either in the past three weeks or
 18 in any of their Memorials throughout this case.

19 And you didn't hear from Steven Donziger, although
 20 you have plenty of evidence--plenty of material--in his own
 21 words that demonstrate the corrupt tactics that the
 22 Plaintiffs pursued in this case. In Slide 153 I tried to
 23 provide you some of the more memorable statements by
 24 Mr. Donziger that demonstrate those corrupt tactics, and I
 25 put them up there just in case I make a reference to them

01:53 1 fact, over a hundred of them generally in other cases,
 2 including nine in the Chevron Case specifically. He
 3 testified that the forensics evidence is inconsistent with
 4 Zambrano's testimony in the RICO case, and he's testified
 5 that the content of the Ecuadorian Judgment was not
 6 generated on the Zambrano computers.

7 Now, this is the one place where the Ecuador has a
 8 partial counter expert in Mr. Racich, but you heard his
 9 cross-examination, and he largely, to a great extent when
 10 he was cross-examined, agreed with much of the testimony of
 11 Mr. Lynch, and he doesn't testify at all about the copying
 12 of the Selva Viva Database into the Judgment as Mr. Lynch
 13 testifies, and he also doesn't testify about Mr. Zambrano's
 14 testimony.

15 Now, you heard from Dr. Juola that he searched the
 16 court record, did a very careful search, and he concluded
 17 that the Plaintiffs' documents that are plagiarized in the
 18 Judgment are nowhere found in the Court Record, and Ecuador
 19 has no counter expert to Dr. Juola.

20 We also brought you the Expert Reports of
 21 Mr. Samuel Hernandez of Morningside Translations, who did a
 22 hand-review of all relevant portions of the Court Record,
 23 and he also concluded that the Plaintiffs' documents that
 24 are plagiarized in the judgment are nowhere found in the
 25 Court Record, and Ecuador has no counter expert to

01:55 1 Mr. Hernandez.
 2 We heard filed an expert report from Mr. Adam
 3 Torres, who marshals all of the documentary evidence that's
 4 relevant to Mr. Guerra's testimony, and he shows the clear
 5 patterns that corroborate that testimony of Mr. Guerra.
 6 And Ecuador chose not to call Mr. Torres for
 7 cross-examination, and it has no counter expert for him.
 8 Now, I'd like to come back to another two further
 9 questions asked by the Tribunal. You asked whether the
 10 RICO Judgment is in evidence in this case. Well, we gave
 11 the RICO decision an exhibit number, so it is an exhibit in
 12 this proceeding. So, it could be treated as evidence.
 13 But, quite frankly, it's better than evidence. You had the
 14 opinion here of a Federal judge who heard all of the same
 15 testimony, he had all the same testimony before him--well,
 16 excuse me. You actually have all the testimony before you
 17 that he had before him and more. He wrote a 500-page
 18 opinion, and he came to some strong conclusions.
 19 Now, we don't say that that opinion is binding on
 20 you, of course, but, quite frankly, it's highly persuasive,
 21 and it's entitled due consideration, so I think that
 22 probably answers the question as best we can on that
 23 subject.
 24 Now, you also asked a question that we've
 25 struggled with somewhat, struggled with trying to

01:57 1 apply it to the facts, and thus that is also evidence of
 2 denial of justice.
 3 But if the question is simply whether if the Court
 4 appropriately took notice of foreign law and got the
 5 foreign law correct in writing the Judgment, I don't think
 6 that would be a denial of justice in and of itself. So I
 7 hope that answers the question.
 8 Now, I'll turn next to the State's role in the
 9 Lago Agrio Case, and after that I'll turn the floor over to
 10 Caline Mouawad and Elizabeth Silbert to discuss the
 11 standard of proof and adverse inferences as well as some of
 12 the evidence.
 13 There are three aspects of the political
 14 interference in the Lago Agrio Case: The first is the
 15 Government's interference in the case to tip the scales of
 16 justice before the Judgment was issued, and this has to do
 17 with President Correa and the Government making the Lago
 18 Agrio Case into a national cause, as they were requested to
 19 do by Fajardo and Donziger, and as Donziger was trying to
 20 get them to do.
 21 The second, which is where I'll spend most of my
 22 time today--I have spent much of my time in the past on
 23 that first issue, so I'm not going to try to retrace the
 24 same ground again, but the second issue is the Government's
 25 promotion of the enforcement of the Judgment, even after

01:56 1 understand it. The question is, what if the Fusión Memo
 2 were an accurate reflection of Ecuadorian law, could that
 3 be a denial of justice? Is it arbitrary to take the
 4 correct account of applicable foreign law, is that a denial
 5 of justice.
 6 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Well, you left out a rather
 7 important phrase, "subject to respecting the Parties'
 8 procedural rights." So, assuming you don't have that as a
 9 problem, which obviously is another part of your case--
 10 MR. BISHOP: Okay.
 11 PRESIDENT VEEDER: --is it inappropriate for an
 12 Ecuadorian judge to take of his own motion judicial notice
 13 of the foreign law.
 14 MR. BISHOP: Okay. I have to tell you, we
 15 understood the question differently.
 16 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Don't worry. We will come back
 17 to it.
 18 MR. BISHOP: We understood the question as
 19 being--as going to the Fusión Memo itself and its
 20 appearance in the Judgment, and perhaps we did
 21 misunderstand. And, of course, the ghostwriting of the
 22 Judgment using the Fusión Memo is, we believe, a denial of
 23 justice. And in this situation, we also believe that the
 24 Court, as I think Mr. Coriell has discussed at some length,
 25 did not consider the legal test appropriately, did not

01:59 1 the fraud and corruption were revealed.
 2 And, third is President Correa's attempts to
 3 control the judiciary more generally to undermine its
 4 independence, which we think is particularly relevant to
 5 the appellate process in this case.
 6 Now, when President Correa took office in
 7 January 2007, he found in the Plaintiffs' case a political
 8 and nationalistic issue. And just as Donziger asked him to
 9 do, Correa and the Government adopted the case as the
 10 Government's case effectively and proceeded to make it into
 11 a national cause in Ecuador. During the pendency of the
 12 case, and especially during the appellate phase of the
 13 case, the Government repeatedly proclaimed Chevron to be
 14 guilty. And in a country like Ecuador with a weak and
 15 fragile judiciary, as Donziger himself explained it, a
 16 strong President who is willing to put his own popularity
 17 and the full weight of the Government behind a case can
 18 clearly tip the scales of justice, as happened exactly in
 19 this case.
 20 Now, the second aspect of the Government's
 21 involvement has been its actions supporting the fraudulent
 22 judgment and promoting its enforcement since it was issued.
 23 When the Judgment was issued, President Correa praised the
 24 Judgment as the most important Judgment in the history of
 25 the country, clearly signaling to the appellate courts what

02:00 1 his position and his Government's position was with respect
 2 to the appeals. And when the Appellate Decision was issued
 3 a year later, he again praised it, saying that justice had
 4 been done, even though during this period, the evidence of
 5 fraud and corruption was coming out.
 6 Now, this Tribunal, in February 2012, issued its
 7 Second Interim Award, ordering that the Government maintain
 8 the status quo by preventing enforcement of the Judgment.
 9 But despite the evidence of fraud and corruption and in
 10 violation of your Interim Awards, Ecuador responded by
 11 initiating a worldwide campaign to promote the Judgment and
 12 its enforcement.
 13 In late 2012, after your Interim Award had been
 14 issued and at a very critical moment in the enforcement
 15 proceedings in Argentina, President Correa flew to Buenos
 16 Aires, he met with the President of Argentina, and he told
 17 the press on that trip that he was there to try to ensure
 18 that the Court ruling in the Chevron Case is complied with,
 19 and you see the reference is there. That's exactly what he
 20 was talking about, and that's what he was doing.
 21 In 2013, the Foreign Ministry even published and
 22 distributed a pamphlet saying, among other things, the
 23 Judgment is enforceable anywhere in the world. And the
 24 Government, in fact, in the past three weeks has been
 25 distributing similar pamphlets outside this very building,

02:04 1 made this case, made the Plaintiffs' case a matter of
 2 Government policy.
 3 The Republic cannot now claim that it's not
 4 involved in the Lago Agrio Case. It has made itself a
 5 participant, and it has made itself a partisan in the case.
 6 And as he did before the Judgment was issued, President
 7 Correa has continued to call Chevron an enemy of the
 8 country. And as he and the Government have also sought to
 9 shame and intimidate Chevron's lawyers and expert
 10 witnesses.
 11 Shortly after President Correa was elected--this
 12 is in February 2007--he asked Donziger for a list of the
 13 lawyers who are hurting the country, and that's a reference
 14 to Chevron's lawyers at that point.
 15 Shortly thereafter, he started making public
 16 statements, calling Chevron's lawyers "vende patrias,"
 17 basically traitors, homeland-selling lawyers who for a few
 18 dollars are capable of selling souls, homeland, family, et
 19 cetera. These are in speeches that he gave.
 20 More recently, he has again referred to anyone who
 21 worked with Chevron as traitors and as opponents of the
 22 Government who have teamed up with Chevron.
 23 And still again more recently, he's referred to
 24 Chevron's attorneys as collaborators who act against the
 25 interest of their own country and their own countrymen.

02:02 1 and you may have seen some of them during that period.
 2 They have the Ministry of Foreign Affairs written on the
 3 outside of each of those pamphlets.
 4 Now, this promotion of the Judgment's enforcement
 5 is a direct violation of your interim awards; and in over
 6 40 countries--I think Mr. Coriell showed you this slide as
 7 well--in over 40 countries since that time, Ecuador's
 8 embassies in the Foreign Ministry have held demonstrations
 9 and various meetings denouncing Chevron and again promoting
 10 the Judgment in saying Chevron is guilty, and it must
 11 comply with the Judgment.
 12 Now, you have seen this next clip before, but I
 13 think it's very important because it shows that President
 14 Correa has instructed the Foreign Ministry to make this
 15 case and this Judgment a first priority of the foreign
 16 policy, so I'd like to show it to you again.
 17 (Video played.)
 18 MR. BISHOP: So, in other words, President Correa
 19 and the Government have made enforcement of the Judgment a
 20 foreign-policy issue--in fact, not just a foreign-policy
 21 issue, but the number one priority of the foreign policy
 22 according to the statement of the Foreign Minister himself,
 23 and the Vice Foreign Minister has made very similar
 24 statements as well, which are also in our record.
 25 And in doing so, what the Government has done is

02:05 1 Now, I want you to please note those words.
 2 Correa is identifying the Plaintiffs' case and the Judgment
 3 as a national interest, and he is saying that Chevron's
 4 lawyers, who are simply defending Chevron, are acting
 5 against the interests of the country. The point of this
 6 and the point of all of these has been to try to deprive
 7 Chevron of legal counsel in Ecuador, and reflecting
 8 President Correa's statements, an Ecuadorian Web site was
 9 established entitled, "The Nation's Traitors," and it
 10 refers specifically to Chevron's lawyers--well, Chevron's
 11 lawyers and also its experts, the various people who have
 12 been working with it. This was an attempt to deprive
 13 Chevron of expert witnesses in this BIT proceeding.
 14 And President Correa in his weekly national radio
 15 addresses has called out Chevron's lawyers and experts and
 16 Contractors by name, and the State-owned newspaper has
 17 published identifying information, personal information,
 18 about those lawyers and experts.
 19 And it's notable that both the President in the
 20 past few weeks leading up to this Hearing and the Vice
 21 President of Ecuador have called Guerra a traitor to the
 22 nation, a traitor for giving evidence in this case, clearly
 23 trying to intimidate him and prevent him from testifying
 24 here.
 25 Now these words, "enemy" and "traitor" are not the

02:07 1 kind of words you normally hear in a lawsuit. These
 2 necessarily, as I said, implicate a national interest.
 3 Ecuador is identifying its national interest with the
 4 Plaintiffs' case, and thus it's identifying Chevron as an
 5 enemy of the country, and its lawyers and experts as
 6 traitors to the nation. It's also the language, of course,
 7 of intimidation, trying to prevent them from testifying in
 8 this case.

9 Now, you asked in your Friday questions if anyone
 10 involved in the fraudulent schemes has been charged. Well,
 11 I would note that Chevron has sent at least 12 letters to
 12 Ecuador's Prosecutor General in the past six years seeking
 13 investigations, first of the Núñez bribery scandal;
 14 secondly of the ghostwriting of the Cabrera Reports; and,
 15 third, of the ghostwriting of the Judgment and the
 16 corruption involved in it. So, all of these matters have
 17 been put before the Prosecutor General, and substantial, in
 18 fact, boxes and boxes of evidence, have been sent to the
 19 Prosecutor General so that he would be fully informed and
 20 have all the material. Chevron has given them all of that
 21 information.

22 And yet, what has happened? No one has been
 23 charged: Not Zambrano, not Fajardo, not Yánza, not
 24 Donziger, and not any others over the past six years. And,
 25 in fact, with regard to the Núñez bribery scandal in

02:09 1 particular, the Prosecutor General closed the investigation
 2 not only taking no action, but he accused Chevron of
 3 recklessly and maliciously filing the complaint and
 4 threatened to investigate Chevron's lawyers instead.

5 Now, in contrast to the fact that Chevron's
 6 requests for investigations have gone absolutely nowhere in
 7 Ecuador, we can see what has happened in Fajardo's request
 8 for a criminal investigation of Guerra. Over the past
 9 week, the day after, in fact, Guerra testified in this
 10 case, that investigation started to move forward very
 11 quickly. The Prosecutor accepted jurisdiction. He added
 12 documents to the file. He required that Chevron's lawyers
 13 appear this week to testify in that investigation, along
 14 with other witnesses, so we have seen substantial action in
 15 that investigation, but nothing in the investigations
 16 requested by Chevron.

17 Now, I would also note that Ecuador's attempts at
 18 intimidation have had their effects.

19 In the RICO case there were four John Doe
 20 witnesses for Chevron whose identity Judge Kaplan kept
 21 confidential because of security concerns for their welfare
 22 in Ecuador, and Judge Kaplan wrote a very long opinion
 23 about maintaining confidentiality for those people.

24 Now, we could have produced their sworn
 25 declarations in this case, and their sworn declarations

02:10 1 corroborate Mr. Guerra's testimony. We would like to have
 2 used that evidence, but because of concerns for their
 3 safety at the hands of the Government, we did not bring
 4 that evidence forward in this case.

5 It's this conduct of intimidation and retaliation
 6 that makes the Republic's actions so insidious. The
 7 President's counsel Alexis Mera at one point had a meeting
 8 with Fajardo in which he said you need to bring a mob to
 9 Quito to close down the streets and to demonstrate because
 10 that's the way this country operates. That's the way this
 11 country works. Now, it's that attitude that has pervaded
 12 the Government's approach to both the Lago Agrio Case and
 13 to this BIT proceeding: Pressure and intimidation.
 14 Intimidate the Judges. Intimidate Guerra. Intimidate
 15 Chevron's experts. Intimidate Chevron itself, and
 16 intimidate others.

17 But that strategy is the very antithesis of the
 18 rule of law. That strategy puts one man's will above the
 19 law.

20 Former Minister Alvarez, in his expert opinions,
 21 noted President Correa's statements, and Mr. Paulsson
 22 alluded to this earlier today, but President Correa has
 23 said that he has the right to pressure the judiciary. When
 24 he was asked about that statement, he said he's the leader
 25 of the entire State, including the Judicial Branch as well

02:12 1 as the other branches. And at one point he called for a
 2 referendum in early 2011 on the judicial system, saying,
 3 among other things he was doing so, "so I could get my
 4 hands on the justice system."

5 And he followed that view, and I have shown you
 6 substantial evidence of this in the past. He's followed
 7 that view by firing and prosecuting judges for the rulings
 8 in specific cases, and here on slide 186 you see two Orders
 9 sent out by the Office of the Presidential Council to the
 10 judiciary in which he's essentially threatening judges
 11 about their decisions in specific cases unless they rule in
 12 favor of the Government. You can read them at your
 13 leisure, but that's essentially what they mean.

14 Now, President Correa may think that he's James
 15 the First, but in the 21st Century, the King's prerogative
 16 does not extend to violating the law, including
 17 international law. The rule of law is why we're here in
 18 this proceeding. It's what restrains despotic rulers.
 19 It's what makes foreign investment and economic development
 20 possible. In fact, it's the very foundation of liberty.

21 What we're asking in this case is that the
 22 Tribunal uphold the rule of law because that's what, in
 23 essence, this case is all about. You don't have to make a
 24 decision that Ecuador's entire judiciary is corrupt or has
 25 substantial problems. The issue before you, the issue in

02:14 1 this case is simply whether Chevron in the full
 2 circumstances of this case can get a fair trial and fair
 3 appeals in a situation in which the President of the
 4 country condemns Chevron as an enemy of the country, and it
 5 condemns its lawyers as traitors to the nation.
 6 And with that, Mr. President, I think that I will
 7 hand the floor over to Caline Mouawad to discuss the
 8 standard of proof and the Judgment fraud.
 9 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you.
 10 Ms. Mouawad.
 11 MS. MOUAWAD: Thank you, Mr. Bishop.
 12 Mr. Chairman, Members of the Tribunal, I will
 13 start by addressing the Tribunal's question from last
 14 Friday about the applicable standards of proof when the
 15 allegations concern what amounts to criminal conduct.
 16 As the Chairman intimated in his question, there's
 17 a distinction between the burden of proof and the standard
 18 of proof. The Rompetrol Tribunal explained that
 19 distinction most clearly. The burden of proof defines
 20 which Party has to prove what in order for its case to
 21 prevail; the standard of proof defines how much evidence is
 22 needed to establish either an individual issue or the
 23 Party's case as a whole.
 24 The relevant rules applicable to our case do not
 25 provide any specific standard of proof that the Tribunal

02:15 1 should apply. Under Dutch law, there are no relevant
 2 mandatory rules that have a bearing on the issue.
 3 Article 1039 Subsection 5 of the 1986 Dutch Arbitration Act
 4 provide that the application of the evidentiary rules is at
 5 the discretion of the Tribunal. The UNCITRAL Rules are
 6 silent on the standard of proof; so, again, it is left to
 7 the Tribunal's discretion. The BIT also has no relevant
 8 rules.
 9 Which brings us to investment arbitral case law,
 10 which may be better suited to assist the Tribunal on the
 11 issue of the proper standard of proof in cases of fraud and
 12 serious wrongdoing.
 13 Judge Higgins cautioned that, "the graver the
 14 charge, the more confidence must be in the evidence relied
 15 on." With that in mind, tribunals have applied different
 16 standards of proof. Some tribunals have imposed a
 17 heightened common law standard of clear and convincing
 18 evidence for fraud and corruption allegations. You see
 19 this in the Siag v. Egypt Case. You also see EDF versus
 20 Romania and Rumeli versus Kazakhstan.
 21 Other tribunals have employed the civil law
 22 standard of reasonable certainty to determine whether
 23 corruption has been established. Reasonable certainty is
 24 the standard of proof that most civil law systems,
 25 including The Netherlands, impose to disputed facts in all

02:17 1 civil proceedings, and generally civil law would not impose
 2 any heightened burden on the standard of proof just because
 3 fraud and corruption are at issue.
 4 More recent jurisprudence has rejected a
 5 heightened standard of proof for fraud allegations in favor
 6 of the ordinary common law standard of balance of
 7 probabilities. You have that in the Libananco case and as
 8 well as in the Rompetrol case.
 9 Whichever standard of proof the Tribunal decides
 10 to apply in this case, the evidence of fraud and judicial
 11 corruption that is before you, Members of the Tribunal, is
 12 overwhelming. There has never been such clear,
 13 uncontroverted, and unrebutted evidence of fraud and
 14 corruption in any one case.
 15 We have videotaped evidence, clip after clip after
 16 clip of government officials doing everything in their
 17 power to help the Plaintiffs against Chevron. We have
 18 videotaped evidence of the President's top legal adviser,
 19 Alexis Mera, advising the Plaintiffs on how to pursue
 20 criminal prosecution of Chevron's lawyers.
 21 We have videotaped evidence of a supposedly
 22 independent damages Court-appointed Expert meeting with the
 23 Plaintiffs prior to his appointments.
 24 And we have videotaped evidence of a judge caught
 25 in a bribery scandal.

02:18 1 We have e-mail evidence--and you saw this this
 2 morning with Mr. Coriell--we have e-mail evidence of the
 3 Attorney General's Office working with the Plaintiffs to,
 4 "search for ways to nullify and undermine the Settlement
 5 and Release Agreements." We have e-mail evidence of the
 6 Plaintiffs' lawyers worried about, "going to jail," because
 7 of their illegal conduct.
 8 We have banking records of bribes paid and secret
 9 accounts.
 10 We have the use of the code names, the cook, the
 11 waiter, the restaurant, the menu, the Wao, the puppet, the
 12 puppeteer, all of these code names to hide the truth of
 13 wrongdoing.
 14 We have admissions by co-conspirators about
 15 ghostwriting Expert Reports and judicial orders.
 16 And we have conclusive forensic evidence that the
 17 Plaintiffs ghostwrote this \$18 billion Judgment.
 18 Under any standard of proof, the amount of
 19 evidence that Chevron has put forward is staggering, and I
 20 would refer you to Judge Kaplan's decision in the RICO
 21 action in which he found that Chevron had proven among
 22 other things the Judgment fraud with clear and convincing
 23 evidence. That's Exhibit C-2135 at Pages 323 to 326.
 24 Chevron has exposed an unprecedented record of
 25 judicial fraud and public corruption, its complexities, its

02:20 1 secrecy, its insidiousness, and Ecuador's only answer is
 2 show us more evidence.
 3 But Ecuador is complicit in ensuring that more
 4 evidence is not found, and that more evidence that is in
 5 Ecuador does not come to light.
 6 You heard Dr. Andrade tell us earlier this week
 7 that the Prosecutor General is required to investigate
 8 judicial fraud, but when Chevron asked the Prosecutor
 9 General three years ago--three years ago--to collect
 10 documents and order the forensic examination of the
 11 computers of Fajardo, Sáenz, Prieto, Yánza, Cabrera, and
 12 Zambrano, among others, in Ecuador, the Prosecutor General
 13 just ignored Chevron's request.
 14 When Chevron provided the Prosecutor General with
 15 the latest evidence of fraud in the Lago Agrio Case, the
 16 Prosecutor General answered that, as the head of public
 17 criminal action, he could not investigate a civil
 18 proceeding, and he returned the three boxes of evidence to
 19 Chevron unopened.
 20 The Prosecutor General repeatedly abdicates his
 21 duty to investigate the judicial fraud that has transpired
 22 in the Chevron case.
 23 And instead of investigating Fajardo or Yánza or
 24 Zambrano, Ecuador is actively pursuing an investigation
 25 against Mr. Guerra for the alleged crime of incitement or

02:23 1 action.
 2 And when Chevron sought Mr. Fajardo's depositions
 3 and special arrangements were made for depositions to be
 4 heard at the U.S. Embassy in Lima, Mr. Fajardo simply
 5 refused to appear and have his deposition taken.
 6 This is the same Fajardo who, just a couple of
 7 years earlier, eagerly submitted a declaration in 17 U.S.
 8 court proceedings, a highly misleading Declaration, in
 9 which he did not disclose blackmailing Judge Yánez into
 10 canceling the judicial inspections, or the Plaintiffs'
 11 secret meeting with Cabrera, or Stratus ghostwriting the
 12 Cabrera Report, or the Plaintiffs' secret payments to
 13 Mr. Cabrera. Mr. Fajardo shamelessly went across the
 14 United States filing this false Declaration in many U.S.
 15 courts, but when it came time to be held accountable by one
 16 of those courts, the New York Court, Mr. Fajardo was
 17 nowhere to be found.
 18 So, in answer to one of the Tribunal's questions,
 19 yes, Mr. Fajardo was requested to give evidence in the RICO
 20 case he refused to do it, and the Court drew an adverse
 21 inference from the lack of his testimony, but it did
 22 clarify that it would have made the same findings even in
 23 the absence of those inferences.
 24 Notwithstanding Ecuador's and the Plaintiffs'
 25 efforts to keep the truth from coming to light, the

02:21 1 fostering separatism, an investigation that Ecuador opened
 2 at the request of Mr. Fajardo, whose very computer is a
 3 critical piece of evidence of the fraud. By investigating
 4 Mr. Guerra rather than Mr. Fajardo, Ecuador is again making
 5 sure that this piece of evidence never comes to light.
 6 Ecuador has also made sure that no other witness
 7 testimony will come to light in Ecuador. As you heard from
 8 Mr. Bishop, Ecuador brazenly uses State power to intimidate
 9 persons assisting Chevron. President Correa personally
 10 denounces anyone who works with Chevron on this case as a
 11 traitor to the nation. Just a few weeks ago, on the eve of
 12 this Hearing, President Correa singled out Mr. Guerra in
 13 his weekly presidential address. And you, Members of the
 14 Tribunal, witnessed how Ecuador's counsel pushed to know
 15 where Mr. Guerra's children and grandchildren live.
 16 Chevron tried to obtain documentary and
 17 testimonial evidence through the New York RICO action as
 18 well, but its efforts to get evidence from the Ecuadorian
 19 co-conspirators were, "largely stonewalled." Even when
 20 ordered to do so, Donziger refused to produce the
 21 Ecuadorian co-conspirators' documents. Mr. Fajardo then
 22 commenced a collusive action in Ecuador, and obtained an
 23 order from an Ecuadorian Court, again complicit with the
 24 Plaintiffs to cover up the fraud, this order enjoining
 25 Mr. Fajardo from producing any documents in the RICO

02:25 1 evidence that you have before you of the Judgment fraud
 2 that took place in Ecuador's courts is as shocking as it is
 3 voluminous. The starting point for examining the Judgment
 4 fraud is the text of the Judgment itself, and that starting
 5 point is an undisputed point between the Parties. The
 6 Judgment copies verbatim from the Plaintiffs' work-product
 7 documents.
 8 Ecuador admitted this point in its Opening
 9 Statement, stating that it "does not dispute the text from
 10 some of the Plaintiffs' documents appears in the Judgment
 11 as Claimants have identified." Ecuador's own forensic
 12 expert Mr. Racich also agreed that the Judgment copied from
 13 work product documents created by the Plaintiffs. This is
 14 the Hearing Transcript at Page 1194.
 15 We saw together the extent of that copying when
 16 Dr. Leonard testified here on the second day of the
 17 Hearing. Dr. Leonard identified five different indicia of
 18 plagiarism across 38 examples in the Judgment spanning
 19 dozens of pages. Among other things, the Judgment copied
 20 word strings of 90 words, 100 words, 150 words. The
 21 Judgment copied identical mistakes. Our starting point is
 22 thus one of common ground. Page after page, the Judgment
 23 copies multiple times and in multiple ways from the
 24 Plaintiffs' work-product documents.
 25 But none of these Plaintiffs' documents copied

02:26 1 into the Judgment appears in the Lago Agrio Court Record.
 2 You heard Dr. Juola explain to you in detail how he
 3 reviewed the entire Lago Agrio Court Record with the aid of
 4 his computers. His analysis was robust and reliable. He
 5 broke down the entire Lago Agrio Court Record into millions
 6 of five word strings scouring the record for a source for
 7 the overlaps. To no avail.

8 Ecuador tried to poke holes in Dr. Juola's
 9 computational analysis by attacking the quality of the OCR
 10 record that he reviewed. Ecuador showed him text files of
 11 the Court Record with localized error, but as Dr. Juola
 12 testified, his reading of the record five words at a time
 13 was specifically intended to mitigate the risk of localized
 14 errors. Even if every other line of text were missing, he
 15 still would have caught a source for overlaps of 50 words,
 16 100 words, 150 words.

17 Ecuador then pointed to a few documents that, when
 18 subjected to the OCR process, produced blank pages, but as
 19 Dr. Juola testified if the Plaintiffs' work-product
 20 documents which you see on the screen, if those documents
 21 had been filed in the Lago Agrio Court Record, they would
 22 have OCR'd very well and would have produced readable text,
 23 not blank pages because these documents were nicely
 24 typeset. These are not handwritten documents, these are
 25 typed and printed documents as you see on the screen.

02:29 1 date of May 28, 2010, which is the date when Chevron began
 2 receiving document production from the discovery actions in
 3 the United States, and so the idea was to ensure that,
 4 prior to May 28, 2010, Chevron would have had no access to
 5 any of that work product. And after that date it would
 6 have, and we wanted to be sure that it hadn't been
 7 inadvertently put in the record through Chevron's own
 8 filings, so this is why you have the subset of
 9 documents--generally all of the Plaintiffs' filings,
 10 anything filed by third parties, and Chevron's filings
 11 after May 28th, 2010.

12 There was a three-level hand review that was done.
 13 First level was two reviewers who looked at every document.
 14 Second level of review was also two reviewers who looked at
 15 the entire set, so it wasn't just first pass, second pass.
 16 The first level, both looked at the entire set; second
 17 level, both looked at the entire set; and then there was a
 18 third level of review that Mr. Hernandez personally
 19 conducted.

20 I hope that elucidates the mystery of the
 21 hand-review.

22 And in doing that very thorough hand-review of
 23 every piece of document in those categories that I just
 24 described, they looked for the passages that came from the
 25 Fusión Memo, the January and June Index Summaries, the

02:28 1 And, in fact, looking at the Plaintiffs' filings
 2 that Ecuador showed Dr. Juola, those filings which for one
 3 of them you should have on the left, the TIFF image,
 4 produced generally good quality text which you see on the
 5 right-hand side after the OCR process. So, Dr. Juola did
 6 not find the Plaintiffs' work-product documents in the Lago
 7 Agrio Record, and Ecuador, despite having clearly spent
 8 time reviewing that record, also did not find the
 9 Plaintiffs' work-product documents in the Court Record.

10 None of the documents that Ecuador showed
 11 Dr. Juola, none of them was the Plaintiffs' internal work
 12 documents.

13 The manual review that Morningside did also came
 14 up empty-handed.

15 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Could I just ask you to take
 16 this piece of evidence quite slowly. There was one
 17 question that we wanted to raise last Friday, and we
 18 omitted to raise it. So, just explain a little bit more as
 19 you go through what Mr. Hernandez's colleagues looked at.

20 MS. MOUAWAD: Sure, I'd be happy to do this.

21 Morningside Translations conducted a manual review
 22 of all the documents filed, of a subset of the documents
 23 filed in the Lago Agrio Litigation, and that subset
 24 includes all of the filings by the Plaintiffs, all of the
 25 filings by third parties, and Chevron's filings after the

02:31 1 Fajardo Trust e-mail, Draft Alegato, Moodie Memo, and Selva
 2 Viva Database.

3 And the conclusion that Mr. Hernandez drew and to
 4 which he testified in his Report is that none of these
 5 overlaps is in the Lago Agrio Court record, and Ecuador has
 6 offered no response to the Morningside manual review of the
 7 record.

8 So no one, not Chevron, not the Plaintiffs, not
 9 Ecuador--absolutely no one--has produced a copy of any
 10 single one of the Plaintiffs' work-product documents as
 11 filed with the Lago Agrio Court.

12 And this brings us to the Lago Agrio Court Record.

13 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Just one moment. Just coming
 14 back to the records that were reviewed by Mr. Hernandez and
 15 his colleagues, you say he reviewed documents filed, but
 16 they were copies of documents or copies of the file. Were
 17 they the product of OCR or were they photocopies?

18 MS. MOUAWAD: They reviewed the actual TIFF
 19 images, so they could be the same TIFF image record that
 20 Dr. Juola was provided for was also provided to
 21 Morningside, so they reviewed the actual documents that
 22 were filed, not a text version that had been OCR'd.

23 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you.

24 MS. MOUAWAD: Sure.

25 So, that brings us to what the Lago Agrio Record

02:32 1 is or isn't.
 2 As Chevron's Expert Dr. Velázquez testified in his
 3 Expert Report, and as you heard Mr. Guerra confirm in
 4 cross-examination, the official Court Record is the one
 5 kept by the Court Clerk. A party will file the document
 6 with the Court Clerk. That document is stamped to prove
 7 that it was received by that Clerk and that it was
 8 submitted to be included in the Court Record, and that's
 9 what we talk about and referred to as the certificate of
 10 submission.
 11 The Clerk stamps a document, and this is a blowup
 12 of that stamp that you will see--handwrites the date when
 13 the document is received by the Clerk, writes in the time
 14 at which it was received, and then signs it.
 15 And typically the party filing a document will
 16 bring an extra copy, have that document also stamped,
 17 signed, and dated, so that it maintains proof of receipt by
 18 the Court.
 19 The copy of the document that is actually included
 20 in the Court Record, that's physically put into the Court
 21 Record is paginated, hand paginated by the Court Clerk and
 22 then inserted into the record, into the Cuerpo of the
 23 record.
 24 So, this is how a Court Record becomes the Court
 25 Record. It's a finite universe of documents that serves as

02:35 1 it here except to say one thing. That among each other,
 2 the poor members of the fraud clearly discussed their plan
 3 to draft the Judgment, as is clear from this June 2009
 4 e-mail, and they wanted to do it without having a member or
 5 Junior member of their team know what he is doing. So,
 6 it's no surprise that they wanted to keep this a secret
 7 from others. And, in fact, many individuals, funders,
 8 lawyers, other people that were part of this whole
 9 fraudulent scheme but who were not members, core members of
 10 the fraud have testified about Donziger and Fajardo
 11 misleading them about what was really going on in the Lago
 12 Agrio Litigation.
 13 Ecuador simply cannot explain away any of the
 14 Plaintiffs' unfiled documents. It speculates, it suggests,
 15 it ignores, but at the end of the day, it cannot produce a
 16 filed copy of any one of these nine documents.
 17 And if you step back for a moment and you look at
 18 these documents on the screen, the Plaintiffs' legal
 19 research memos, the Plaintiffs' database of sampling
 20 results, the Plaintiffs' internal index of the Court
 21 Record, the Plaintiffs' internal e-mails, these documents
 22 are precisely the types of documents that the Plaintiffs
 23 would have had at their fingertips in ghostwriting the
 24 Judgment, which explains how they left their fingerprints
 25 all over that judgment.

02:33 1 a basis for a judge's decision. And the importance of the
 2 Court Record cannot be overstated. As Dr. Velázquez stated
 3 in his Report, "what is not part of the record lacks
 4 procedural value and obviously can't be used as basis or
 5 element to render a decision."
 6 And Dr. Andrade agreed and went even further:
 7 Documents that are not properly submitted, to the Court,
 8 "do not exist."
 9 A judge cannot consider evidence that is not in
 10 the Court Record. That is a breach of Ecuadorian law and
 11 of due process, and for that I refer you to the Expert
 12 Report of Dr. Velázquez. And yet that is precisely what
 13 the Lago Agrio Judgment does. It relies over and over
 14 again on evidence not in the Court Record. No one has ever
 15 found an official filed copy of any single one of the
 16 Plaintiffs' work product documents, but Ecuador expects you
 17 to believe that Judge Zambrano supposedly found each of
 18 these nine Plaintiffs' documents. Now, Ecuador makes a
 19 last-ditch attempt to undermine this overwhelming evidence
 20 of fraud by pointing to a handful of Fajardo e-mails in
 21 December 2010 and January 2011 as supposed evidence that
 22 the Plaintiffs did not know when the Judgment was coming,
 23 and so they could not have ghostwritten that judgment.
 24 Mr. Bishop already addressed Ecuador's argument in
 25 detail in his opening presentation, so I will not revisit

02:37 1 And if we look specifically at this Selva Viva
 2 Database, it's one of the dozen examples of the Plaintiffs'
 3 fingerprints that simply cannot be explained any other way
 4 than by the Plaintiffs' ghostwriting. The forensic
 5 evidence in this regard is conclusive, and I would refer
 6 the Tribunal to Mr. Lynch's testimony starting on Page 948
 7 and Mr. Racich's testimony starting on Page 1195, so I will
 8 just cover this very quickly because I want you to see the
 9 points that cannot be refuted where the forensic evidence
 10 is clear, and it cannot be refuted.
 11 We know that the author of the Judgment used the
 12 Selva Viva Database. There are data and naming
 13 irregularities that are copy-pasted into the Judgment.
 14 There are statistical percentages calculated across
 15 thousands of lab results from within the database that
 16 appear into the Judgment, and I think you will remember
 17 this slide, I should give credit to Mr. Lynch from his
 18 opening presentation. Mr. Racich agreed and testified that
 19 whoever calculated the statistics that made it into the
 20 Judgment must have had access to the Selva Viva Database.
 21 We also know from Mr. Lynch that the Selva Viva
 22 Database, if printed, would print out to more than 2000
 23 pages and would be completely unusable. It is only usable
 24 in electronic form.
 25 So, we know that the Selva Viva Database

02:38 1 information is in the Judgment, that it must have been in
2 electronic form. We know that the Selva Viva Database is
3 not in the Lago Agrio Record, not in the paper record, and
4 not in the 69 CDs. And for this I refer you to Dr. Juola's
5 January 2013 and June 2013 Reports.

6 We also know that there are no electronic copies
7 of the Plaintiffs' documents on Zambrano's computers. Both
8 Mr. Lynch and Mr. Racich testified to that.

9 We know that Zambrano's computers were not used to
10 calculate the statistics in the Judgment. Mr. Lynch
11 testified that Excel was used for fewer than five minutes
12 during the period of Zambrano's second tenure from
13 October 2010 through March 2011, and that it was not used
14 at all during the period from December 21 to December 28,
15 2010, where content from the Selva Viva Database was
16 entered into the Providencias document. And Mr. Racich
17 agreed with Mr. Lynch's testimony regarding the amount of
18 Excel usage on Zambrano's computers.

19 So, Ecuador can speculate all it wants about how
20 Judge Zambrano may have received the Selva Viva Database,
21 but the forensic evidence is irrefutable. Judge Zambrano
22 did not have the Selva Viva Database on his computers. He
23 did not download it. He did not use it. He did not make
24 calculations with it. There is simply no explanation for
25 how data and naming irregularities and statistical

02:40 1 percentages from the Selva Viva Database made their way
2 into the Judgment other than the Plaintiffs put them there,
3 the same way that they put in the rest of their internal
4 unfiled documents into the Judgment as we just saw.
5 Ecuador simply cannot explain away the evidence.

6 I will now turn the floor to Ms. Silbert who will
7 show you how Ecuador has tried to minimize this mountain of
8 Judgment fraud evidence by limiting the extent of the
9 evidence that it wanted you to hear.

10 Thank you.

11 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you.

12 Ms. Silbert.

13 MS. SILBERT: Members of the Tribunal, good
14 afternoon.

15 In its questions to the Parties last week,
16 Tribunal asked the extent to which it can draw adverse
17 inferences from the failure of certain witnesses to appear.
18 Over the next 15 minutes, I will address that question
19 along with the larger theme of missing Witnesses that have
20 been so prominent in this Hearing.

21 With respect to Claimants' witnesses, Ecuador made
22 a tactical choice not to confront many of the key witnesses
23 we brought regarding the Judgment fraud. Instead, they
24 critiqued that evidence indirectly through the argument of
25 counsel or by questioning witnesses without direct

02:41 1 knowledge.

2 With regard to the missing witnesses on Ecuador's
3 side, I note that Ecuador brought forward, as Mr. Bishop
4 previewed, not one witness to support its elaborate version
5 of events of how this Judgment came to be.

6 I will go through some of Claimants' witnesses
7 that you did not hear from over the last three weeks.
8 First is Adam Torres, a 30-year veteran of the U.S.
9 Marshals and the IRS fraud investigation. He has a unique
10 background of investigating thousands of public corruption
11 claims, including thousands of judicial corruption claims
12 in his 30-year career.

13 What he did in this case was to conduct an
14 independent, from-scratch review of more than a million
15 records provided to him directly, and looking only at the
16 corroborating evidence of what happened and what was
17 attached to Mr. Guerra's report. He found that the
18 documents, standing alone, were consistent with the pattern
19 of public corruption that he identified in his career. He
20 also opined that none of the alternative theories brought
21 forward survived the challenge of investigation.

22 And I'm going to show you a timeline of the
23 documents culled together by Mr. Torres. Now, in order to
24 analyze and investigate the chain of events, he assembled a
25 timeline, and even without Guerra's words narrating the

02:43 1 story as you've heard before, the plot is very clear.
2 You've seen these documents before, so I won't go into them
3 in great detail. I just will walk through one pattern. We
4 see on November 18 a Draft Order saved to Guerra's
5 computer, the next day a shipping receipt of a package to
6 Narcisa Leon at the Lago Agrio Court, and four days later
7 Judge Zambrano issues an order with closely matching text.
8 A few days later, there is a \$1,000 withdrawal from the
9 Selva Viva bank account as evidenced in the record itself,
10 and the next day, an internal e-mail from the Plaintiffs'
11 team we have seen before. "The budget is higher since we
12 are paying the puppeteer." And that day a 1,000-dollar
13 deposit, according to Guerra's own bank account statement.

14 And from there we see the pattern repeat itself
15 again and again, and the timeline continues.

16 Another witness you did not hear from is
17 Dr. Gerald McMenam, a Spanish linguist with significant
18 testifying expertise on Authorship issues. Dr. McMenam
19 concluded that it's highly probable the Judgment has
20 multiple authors and that Nicholas Zambrano did not author
21 a significant amount of that document.

22 He achieved this analysis by relying on what he
23 calls style markers: He analyzed seven different ones, and
24 I'll show you just one.

25 Mr. Zambrano, in his known writings, has a very

02:45 1 unique and very consistent manner of subdividing his
 2 headings. You see a number, a period, a dash, a number, a
 3 parentheses, a period, a dash. It's quite consistent among
 4 documents.
 5 When you look at the Judgment, however, you see
 6 all sorts of styles used. It goes back and forth from one
 7 to the other. No internal inconsistency whatsoever.
 8 Now, Dr. McMenamin concluded that this means
 9 multiple authors, but I note that this evidence also
 10 dovetails with the forensic evidence proving that the
 11 Judgment is a collection of cut and pasted text from
 12 different sources.
 13 Another witness, Dr. Vladimiro Alvarez, his
 14 qualifications are here on the screen, and they are many,
 15 but I also note to you that his Report attached hundreds
 16 upon hundreds of public media and NGO reports on the state
 17 of the judiciary of Ecuador and its decline in recent
 18 years.
 19 Dr. Alvarez concluded that the Executive Branch
 20 has continually violated the rule of law by influencing
 21 courts and tribunals. Ecuador never confronted him on this
 22 conclusion. Instead, and to make a point personal that
 23 we've heard from several times in our Closing Statements
 24 today, Mr. Alvarez testified before the New York Court
 25 about the effect that President Correa's statements calling

02:46 1 him and other Chevron witnesses "traitors," the effect that
 2 that had on his personal reputation, his 35-year career as
 3 a professor and his working life as an attorney.
 4 The fourth and final witness I will go over with
 5 you is Professor Mitchell Seligson, a professor at
 6 Vanderbilt University. He's responsible for the Latin
 7 American Public Opinion Project which administers the
 8 Americas Barometer Survey throughout Latin America.
 9 Mr. Seligson has personally conducted these surveys in
 10 Ecuador since 2001. And what you did hear Ecuador do this
 11 week is tout one of Professor Seligson's own surveys in its
 12 opening. Again, without calling him for cross. You see
 13 the cover of this survey sponsored by USAID. At the bottom
 14 we see the LAPOP Project and Vanderbilt University. He is
 15 the director of this study.
 16 Now, if Mr. Seligson had been here, he would have
 17 told you that the 2014 Report far from endorsing Ecuador's
 18 judiciary, marked the lowest point in a decade of
 19 confidence in the judiciary among the Americas, that
 20 Ecuador continued to rank among the most corrupt countries
 21 in the Americas, and that more than 68 percent of
 22 Respondents in Ecuador said that corruption is somewhat or
 23 very common among government officials in their country.
 24 I've put Professor Seligson's ultimate conclusion
 25 up here for you: "The high level of bribery and the low

02:48 1 level of confidence that the Courts in Ecuador guarantee
 2 fair trials support the conclusion that the Courts of
 3 Ecuador do not offer impartial tribunals." Again, he has
 4 never been cross-examined on that ultimate conclusion.
 5 And these are but a few of the Witnesses you did
 6 not hear from this week--I'm sorry, this month, from the
 7 Claimants' side.
 8 You also have not heard Ecuador challenge the
 9 testimony of many who have disavowed the Judgment. And I
 10 put up here on the board several witnesses who have
 11 publicly recanted their involvement in this case. This
 12 involves them admitting wrongdoing in many instances. And
 13 for the funders, they have forfeited their stake in the
 14 Judgment, and many millions of sunk costs towards the Lago
 15 Agrio Plaintiffs' legal case.
 16 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Would you mind just going
 17 through their names and telling us where they came from.
 18 MS. SILBERT: Sure. You see at the top
 19 Mr. Beltman and Ms. Maest, across, those are Stratus
 20 consultants. Mr. Russell and Mr. Quarles were early
 21 Experts who had provided assessments that they later
 22 recanted, and the cleansing Experts who gave depositions
 23 either recanting--well, recanting their findings or stating
 24 that the findings relied on the Cabrera Report and did not
 25 come from independent testing and data.

02:49 1 At the bottom, Joe Kohn, an American lawyer who
 2 originally had worked with the Plaintiffs, Mr. McDermott
 3 and Mr. Shinder, also attorneys. Chris Bogart, Mr. De Leon
 4 and Woodsford were all litigation funders. Mr. Bogart, his
 5 declaration is in the record. Mr. De Leon and the
 6 Woodsford, those settlements have become public in very
 7 recent months since we last submitted a Memorial on the
 8 Merits, our last Memorial on the Merits.
 9 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Forgive me for interrupting,
 10 when you say "settled," were they Defendants in the RICO
 11 litigation in New York?
 12 MS. SILBERT: No, I apologize. And correct me if
 13 I'm mistaken, but they were not, those are separate
 14 settlements agreed between Chevron and those Parties.
 15 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Okay.
 16 MS. SILBERT: Changing gears from Claimant's case
 17 to Ecuador's. We also note that Ecuador has brought
 18 forward no witnesses to support its version of events. Of
 19 course, the key missing witness is Mr. Zambrano and
 20 Mr. Bishop will tell you more about him later, but we also
 21 note that there are several Court employees who could have
 22 come forward to discuss Ecuador's side of this case, and
 23 that includes Ms. Calva, Ms. Leon, Mr. Albán. The
 24 Plaintiffs' legal team are another category of witnesses we
 25 do not see here, and given their eagerness to defend the

02:51 1 Judgment in the media and tout it as a historic victory,
 2 one would presume they would be willing to defend it here
 3 before you, but none have stepped forward to testify under
 4 oath.
 5 Now, the Tribunal asked last week about
 6 Ms. Calva's testimony before the New York Court. This
 7 timeline sets forward the events that took place there. I
 8 will note that all of the documents referenced here are on
 9 the record with two exceptions, the November 20 Court Order
 10 and the December 4 through the 7th migration records. With
 11 the Tribunal's permission, we would ask to add those to the
 12 record in response to the Tribunal's questions. We have
 13 the exhibit numbers ready, and we can distribute the
 14 documents at the end of our presentation.
 15 PRESIDENT VEEDER: If you can first show them to
 16 the Respondent, and then we will see where we go.
 17 MS. SILBERT: Yes, we will do that.
 18 In brief, the timeline is as follows, two weeks
 19 into the RICO Case, the Defendants moved to add
 20 Evelyn Calva to their witness list and to submit her
 21 notarized Declaration. Judge Zambrano was deposed the very
 22 next day after that Declaration was signed and admitted
 23 Ms. Calva's involvement in writing the Judgment.
 24 Judge Kaplan accepted Ms. Calva's Declaration on
 25 the condition that she submit to a deposition, a sworn

02:54 1 without showing sufficient cause, the Tribunal may make the
 2 Award on the evidence before it; in other words, the rules
 3 suggest sticking to the record at hand.
 4 The IBA Rules, however, explicitly permit adverse
 5 inferences both with respect to documentary evidence and
 6 witness testimony. Here we see if a party fails to make
 7 available any other relevant evidence, including testimony
 8 sought by one party or fails to make available evidence
 9 including testimony ordered by the Tribunal, the Tribunal
 10 may infer that such evidence would be adverse to the
 11 interests of that party.
 12 And, finally, we have reviewed Dutch law on this
 13 matter. As Ms. Mouawad told you, the application of Dutch
 14 procedural law is discretionary under the Dutch Arbitration
 15 Act, but we simply note that adverse inferences are
 16 permitted.
 17 Regarding the practical application of adverse
 18 inferences by international tribunals, we point the
 19 Tribunal to a thorough survey of the practices of the
 20 Iran-U.S. Claims Tribunal on adverse inferences in
 21 particular, published in Arbitration International and
 22 which summarizes many published decisions of that Tribunal.
 23 Here you see a five-point test. We would state that all
 24 five of these factors are met. But we do note two
 25 procedural requirements that emerge from the practice of

02:52 1 deposition, in New York. And over the next week, the
 2 Defendant's lawyers represented that they would obtain a
 3 visa for Ms. Calva and her sister to travel to the United
 4 States. Those visas were obtained, but the very next day,
 5 the lawyers advised the Court that they would no longer
 6 call Ms. Calva to trial. The trial concluded on
 7 November 26th, and on December 4th, Ms. Calva traveled to
 8 New York, accompanied by her sister. How did Judge Kaplan
 9 weigh Ms. Calva's evidence before him? You see how he
 10 assessed it in his ultimate decision. He noted that at
 11 first Zambrano stated in his original Declaration he was
 12 the only Author of the Judgment. Then Ms. Calva's
 13 existence was actually first disclosed by Mr. Guerra. And
 14 after Guerra had testified, the Defendants moved to add
 15 Ms. Calva as a witness, and at that point Zambrano changed
 16 his story.
 17 Judge Kaplan said, of course, Ms. Calva readily
 18 could have confirmed or denied Zambrano's account; and
 19 while the Court does not draw any inference as to the
 20 substance of her testimony she would have given, her
 21 absence is worthy of note. We ask the Tribunal to make a
 22 similar inference with respect to Judge Zambrano's
 23 testimony at least.
 24 The UNCITRAL Rules states that if one party duly
 25 invited to produce documentary evidence fails to do so

02:56 1 the Tribunal.
 2 First, there is a consensus that an adverse
 3 inference must relate to an Order by the Tribunal under the
 4 IBA Rules. And there is also a consensus that a tribunal
 5 must notify a party of its evidential obligations and give
 6 it a sufficient opportunity to produce the evidence before
 7 drawing the inference. For that reason, we suggest
 8 treating the failure of certain witnesses to appear,
 9 including Judge Zambrano, as additional circumstantial
 10 evidence of concealment of wrongdoing without drawing
 11 formal inferences as to the content of that testimony.
 12 A similar approach was found by the Feldman versus
 13 Mexico Tribunal. In this case, the Claimant alleged
 14 discrimination. It said that it was denied export rebates
 15 that were handed out to their local Mexican equivalents.
 16 And here the Tribunal noted the utter failure of Mexico to
 17 bring exonerating evidence before the Tribunal. Instead,
 18 Mexico had focused its defense on the corporate structure
 19 of the Claimant Parties.
 20 As the Tribunal said: Why would any rational
 21 party have taken this approach at the Hearing and in the
 22 Briefs if it had information in its possession that would
 23 have shown that the Mexican-owned cigarette exporters were
 24 being treated in the same manner as the Claimant? This
 25 allowed the Tribunal to make an inference based on that

02:57 1 failure to present evidence. It was treated as another
 2 weight on the scale of evidence before the Tribunal.
 3 At the very heart of this issue, and in conclusion
 4 of my presentation, we note Ecuador's responsibility to
 5 produce all evidence in its possession to establish the
 6 truth, whatever it may be. In this case, the Parker versus
 7 Mexico Commission took into account the Respondent's
 8 failure to produce relevant evidence in reaching its
 9 decision.
 10 This concludes my presentation. I turn it back to
 11 Mr. Bishop, who will explain to you the evidence that is
 12 before you concerning the conduct of Guerra and Zambrano
 13 which is more than sufficient to support a finding of
 14 fraud.
 15 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Just before that happens, you
 16 referred to Jeremy Sharpe's Article in Slide 246, Exhibit
 17 CLA-620. I don't believe we have that electronically.
 18 MS. SILBERT: No, that's correct. I apologize.
 19 There are several Legal Authorities that we are seeking to
 20 introduce into the record in response to the Tribunal's
 21 questions of last Friday. We also have them ready to
 22 distribute at the end of our presentation, and can hand
 23 them to Ecuador before turning them in.
 24 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Do share them to the Respondent
 25 first.

03:00 1 forthright answers in his testimony in the past two weeks;
 2 Second, the extent to which his testimony is
 3 corroborated by independent and documentary evidence;
 4 And, third, from the extent to which our own
 5 common sense tells us that his testimony is probably
 6 correct given the full facts and circumstances that you
 7 otherwise have before you.
 8 So, in the next few minutes, I intend to go
 9 through the corroborating evidence in particular for the
 10 testimony you've heard from Mr. Guerra.
 11 First of all, there is no dispute that Mr. Guerra
 12 was generally ghostwriting Court Orders for Judge Zambrano
 13 at least in other cases. Zambrano, in fact, admitted this
 14 in his RICO testimony. He admitted that Guerra, in the
 15 period from 2009 to 2012, was helping him draft Court
 16 Orders generally. So, we had that admitted from Zambrano
 17 himself.
 18 Mr. Lynch, in his forensic examination of
 19 Mr. Guerra's computers, found over 100 draft Court Orders
 20 on Guerra's computer that were later issued by Zambrano in
 21 his other cases. So, there is no dispute that Guerra was
 22 generally ghostwriting Orders for Zambrano. There is no
 23 dispute about that whatsoever.
 24 Now, Zambrano, however, denies that Guerra
 25 ghostwrote Court Orders in the Chevron Case specifically.

02:59 1 MS. SILBERT: Yes.
 2 PRESIDENT VEEDER: So it would be 620, 623, 621.
 3 MS. SILBERT: Correct.
 4 PRESIDENT VEEDER: We will sort that out later.
 5 MS. SILBERT: And we have an index as well for
 6 everyone to view.
 7 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Show it to the Respondent
 8 first. Thank you very much.
 9 MS. SILBERT: We will. Thank you.
 10 MR. BISHOP: Thank you, Mr. President.
 11 At this point we move to the end of our discussion
 12 of the fraud and corruption facts, and what I plan to do is
 13 to take you briefly through some of the testimony of
 14 Mr. Guerra and the corroborating evidence for his
 15 testimony, and then move to Mr. Zambrano and discuss the
 16 RICO evidence or the RICO testimony that he gave. And I
 17 should be approximately 30 to 40 minutes in that endeavor.
 18 Now, you have been able to see and hear directly
 19 from Mr. Guerra, and as I mentioned in the opening,
 20 Mr. Guerra is no saint. He's admitted to some very serious
 21 wrongdoing, but the question the Tribunal has to deal with
 22 with respect to his testimony is simply whether the
 23 testimony that he has given before you is true or not, and
 24 there are three ways in which you can go about doing that:
 25 First, from your own view of his demeanor and his

03:02 1 But first of all, in light of the clear pattern that Guerra
 2 and Zambrano had established with Guerra ghostwriting over
 3 100 Orders, Zambrano's testimony in this regard has to be
 4 viewed with substantial scepticism.
 5 And what I had planned to do next was to walk you
 6 through but very quickly the evidence that corroborates
 7 Mr. Guerra's testimony that he was paid \$1,000 a month by
 8 the Plaintiffs to ghostwrite the Court Orders for Zambrano
 9 in the Chevron Case specifically and to move the case along
 10 quickly for them, and you see Mr. Guerra's testimony in the
 11 next slide.
 12 The first corroborating evidence I would refer you
 13 to is the Plaintiffs' own e-mails. When Zambrano was
 14 becoming the Judge in his first tenure in September 2009,
 15 October 2009, Fajardo sent an e-mail to Donziger in which
 16 he said "I understand that Zambrano himself asked Judge
 17 Núñez...that Núñez help him with the Orders."
 18 So, what you see is that, in their own e-mails,
 19 the Plaintiffs are saying that they knew that Zambrano
 20 needed help with the Orders, his Orders were ghostwritten
 21 and they were thinking who do they want to have
 22 ghostwriting these Orders, Núñez who is being recused from
 23 the case or Zambrano?
 24 And also, I showed you in the Opening Statement--I
 25 haven't put it up again here--the use of code names by the

03:03 1 Plaintiffs for Guerra and Zambrano in this period, in
 2 September, October and November 2009, they were referring
 3 to Guerra and Zambrano as the puppeteer and the puppet.
 4 And the only reason they would be using code names to hide
 5 the identities of Guerra and Zambrano is that they knew
 6 that what they were doing was illegal.
 7 Now, secondly--and this is very important, and you
 8 see it on the next slide, I put this up in the opening
 9 statement--we can match up the bank records both of
 10 Mr. Guerra and of the Plaintiffs themselves to show that
 11 they were paying Guerra \$1,000 a month during this period
 12 to ghostwrite the Orders. The Plaintiffs were using the
 13 Selva Viva company, which was set up by Donziger to support
 14 the Plaintiffs, and he's testified to that. There is no
 15 dispute about it. But what you see in this slide is that,
 16 throughout this period of Zambrano's first term on the
 17 Court from October 2009 to February 2010, you see \$1,000
 18 cash withdrawals from the Selva Viva bank account and
 19 either the same day or the next day you see that same
 20 amount of money being put into Mr. Guerra's bank account.
 21 And for the first two deposits, we can match them
 22 up to e-mails that Fajardo and Yánza were sending referring
 23 to them paying the puppeteer.
 24 For the last two, we have direct evidence that
 25 they were the ones who were making these payments into

03:06 1 this. Mr. Lynch did a forensic examination of Mr. Guerra's
 2 computer, and he found the drafts of nine Court Orders in
 3 the Chevron Case that were ultimately issued by Zambrano,
 4 he found those drafts on Mr. Guerra's computer. The drafts
 5 on Guerra's computer pre-date the later issuance of those
 6 same Court Orders by Zambrano. And Mr. Lynch compared the
 7 contents of the drafts on Guerra's computer to the final
 8 issued documents. He found substantial overlaps of the
 9 language, but they were not identical, so they were clearly
 10 drafts as they appeared on Guerra's computer.
 11 Now, fourth, we can also confirm that these were
 12 drafts by looking at their contents because what we find,
 13 as you will see on Slide 259, is that Guerra left blank
 14 spaces in these Orders. You heard him testify about this
 15 last week when he was here. He left blank spaces, and he
 16 put editorial notes in all capital letters for Zambrano in
 17 places where he didn't have the information, and Zambrano
 18 had to fill in, for example, the names of expert witnesses,
 19 so you see those editorial notes in the drafts on Guerra's
 20 computer that he was sending to Zambrano. And Mr. Guerra
 21 testified about this in his testimony that, in fact, these
 22 were editorial notes to Zambrano to fill in.
 23 Now, fifth, Mr. Guerra testified, and Mr. Zambrano
 24 confirmed in his RICO testimony, that Guerra would, in
 25 fact, sometimes ship draft Court Orders to him using TAME

03:05 1 Mr. Guerra's account because the deposit slips were signed
 2 by Ximena Centeno. And when she signed the deposit slips,
 3 she had to put her cédula number--that is her personal
 4 identification number in Ecuador--on the deposit slips.
 5 You can see it on the next slide, and we have matched that
 6 cédula up to the governmental records to show that, in
 7 fact, that is her number.
 8 And Mr. Donziger, in his RICO testimony, testified
 9 that Ms. Centeno was an employee of Selva Viva at the time
 10 these payments were being made to Mr. Guerra.
 11 Mr. Guerra has also testified that he would learn
 12 sometimes of these deposits into his account because
 13 Mr. Fajardo would call him and tell him that deposits were
 14 being made into his account on that day or the previous
 15 day.
 16 And this pattern, as I said, occurs throughout
 17 Zambrano's first term on the Court and it corroborates
 18 Mr. Guerra's testimony that he was being paid \$1,000 a
 19 month by the Plaintiffs, and the only reason they would be
 20 paying him that money was to ghostwrite Court Orders in the
 21 Chevron Case, and neither Ecuador nor Donziger nor anyone
 22 else has given any other explanation for why these payments
 23 would be made to Mr. Guerra except his explanation that it
 24 was because of the ghostwriting.
 25 Now, third, we also have forensic evidence of

03:08 1 Shipping, and we have, sixth, the TAME shipping records.
 2 You have those before you, and they were discussed in the
 3 testimony of Mr. Guerra. Mr. Guerra confirmed in his
 4 testimony that he, in fact, sent Draft Orders to
 5 Narcisca Leon at the Lago Agrio Courthouse to submit to
 6 Mr. Zambrano. The reason was Mr. Zambrano was being very
 7 careful to avoid clear-cut paper trails, so that's why they
 8 were being sent instead of to him directly, as they were in
 9 other cases, they were being sent through the Court Clerk
 10 Narcisca Leon.
 11 And seventh and finally, and Ms. Silbert has
 12 already addressed this particular slide, Slide 264, you see
 13 the clear patterns of how this worked. The Draft Order
 14 last saved on Guerra's computer on October 20th, for
 15 example, and the next day Zambrano issues an Order with
 16 text matching that found on Guerra's computer.
 17 On November 18th, you have a draft Order last
 18 saved on Guerra's computer, the next day Guerra sends a
 19 shipment to Narcisca Leon through TAME shipping and in four
 20 days later Zambrano issues an Order with matching text, and
 21 that same pattern goes on.
 22 Mr. Adam Torres, as Ms. Silbert has told you, has
 23 taken all of this evidence and has matched it into
 24 patterns, and he testifies about it in his Expert Report.
 25 Now, Mr. Guerra, moving to the subject of the

03:10 1 ghostwriting of the Judgment, Mr. Guerra testified that, on
 2 instructions from Mr. Zambrano--and I should go back for a
 3 moment. Both Mr. Guerra and Mr. Zambrano in the RICO Case
 4 testified that they had a close and long-standing
 5 relationship, that was not denied by Zambrano, Zambrano
 6 admitted that. So Mr. Guerra testified that Zambrano used
 7 him as an intermediary to solicit a bribe for the
 8 ghostwriting of the Judgment. On Zambrano's instructions,
 9 he approached Chevron's lawyers about a bribe in exchange
 10 for ghostwriting the Judgment through intermediaries. In
 11 the last part of 2010, you have the Chevron lawyers'
 12 testimony in the RICO Case before you, so we know that that
 13 occurred.

14 After Chevron rejected that approach, Zambrano
 15 then instructed Mr. Guerra to solicit a \$500,000 bribe from
 16 the Plaintiffs in exchange for allowing them to ghostwrite
 17 the Judgment.

18 Now, the only reason for the Plaintiffs to be
 19 meeting with Mr. Guerra as he did at this point, was
 20 because they knew that he was close to Zambrano, they knew
 21 that he had been ghostwriting Court Orders for Zambrano
 22 because they had been paying him to do it during Zambrano's
 23 first term and they knew that he was Zambrano's
 24 intermediary. So, Mr. Guerra on Zambrano's instruction,
 25 reached out to Donziger, and they set a meeting at the

03:12 1 Honey & Honey Restaurant in Quito, which was attended by
 2 Donziger, Fajardo and Yánza and by Mr. Guerra. And at this
 3 meeting, Guerra testifies that he passed on this offer from
 4 Zambrano to allow the Plaintiffs to ghostwrite the Judgment
 5 in return for a \$500,000 bribe. And we know that that
 6 meeting occurred, and we know that that bribe solicitation
 7 occurred because Donziger, in his RICO testimony, confirmed
 8 it. He admitted, in fact, that they did have this meeting
 9 at the restaurant in Quito and, in fact, that Guerra did
 10 solicit, on behalf of Zambrano, the \$500,000 bribe in order
 11 to fix the case with the Plaintiffs.

12 So, the fact of those meetings is established.
 13 It's confirmed and corroborated by independent testimony
 14 from Donziger himself.

15 And what happened after that is very interesting
 16 because Guerra has testified that Fajardo later approached
 17 him about being an expert for the RICO Defendants in the
 18 RICO Case in New York about the Ecuadorian judiciary, and
 19 Donziger confirmed in his testimony that he was aware that
 20 that approach, in fact, happened. So, we know that the
 21 Plaintiffs certainly weren't outraged by this bribe
 22 solicitation.

23 In summary, Guerra's testimony about the bribe
 24 solicitation is corroborated both by the testimony of
 25 Chevron's lawyers about the attempt to seek a bribe from

03:13 1 them which they rejected, and it's also corroborated by
 2 Donziger in his RICO testimony, so we know that this was
 3 happening.

4 Now, in this case, we have a rare example of
 5 direct evidence from an insider to a fraudulent scheme.
 6 Had Guerra not come forward and become a witness, Chevron
 7 would never have learned about the various details of this
 8 scheme, including, for example, the bribe solicitation to
 9 the Plaintiffs at the Honey and Honey Restaurant. And
 10 without Guerra, Chevron would not have known to ask
 11 Mr. Donziger about that in the RICO testimony, and so it
 12 never would have come to light.

13 Now, you've heard about Mr. Guerra's security
 14 concerns since filing his Declaration on behalf of Chevron.
 15 He testified about those concerns. You asked him about the
 16 Fajardo complaint, and you have seen the cross-examination
 17 of him with respect to his children and his grandchildren.
 18 And in the past week, as I've noted, that investigation
 19 sought by Guerra has now been moving forward. It's clearly
 20 retaliatory, but unfortunately, it's very much in line with
 21 attempts we have seen by the Respondent to intimidate
 22 Guerra and others of Chevron's Expert Witnesses by calling
 23 them "traitors."

24 Now, by contrast to the treatment that we see from
 25 the Respondent of Guerra, I would like to next turn to

03:15 1 Mr. Zambrano and see the very disparate treatment we see
 2 with respect to him from the Respondent.

3 ARBITRATOR GRIGERA NAÓN: To set the record
 4 straight, the investigation is sought by Fajardo, not by
 5 Guerra.

6 MR. BISHOP: Yes, I'm sorry. If I said that, I
 7 apologize.

8 ARBITRATOR GRIGERA NAÓN: I think you said that.

9 MR. BISHOP: I apologize. Yes, it was sought by
 10 Mr. Fajardo, that's correct.

11 Now, a year ago this Tribunal emphasized to the
 12 parties in this case that you wanted to see in person two
 13 witnesses, Mr. Guerra, whom you have seen, and
 14 Mr. Zambrano, who you haven't. We asked the Government to
 15 bring Zambrano to this Hearing. And as this Hearing
 16 approached, you asked Mr. Zambrano yourselves to have him
 17 come to this Hearing. Now, we asked the Government to
 18 bring him because we know that he works for, he's
 19 testified, he works for a company that is majority-owned
 20 and controlled by Petroecuador, the national oil company of
 21 Ecuador, so he is effectively controlled in that regard by
 22 the Government.

23 We brought Mr. Guerra for you to see, but the
 24 Government did not bring Zambrano. So now you have a major
 25 contrast in that regard. You've seen and heard from

03:17 1 Guerra. You haven't had an opportunity, however, to see
 2 Zambrano. And why is that? Why didn't the Government
 3 bring--why didn't the Republic bring Zambrano to testify?
 4 Well, the answer, I think, is actually a very simple
 5 answer: He didn't write the Judgment. He's not a credible
 6 witness, and they can't put him on the stand. And the
 7 evidence of that is to look at the RICO Opinion of Judge
 8 Kaplan where he finds specifically that Zambrano is not a
 9 credible witness. Now, although you didn't get to see or
 10 hear Zambrano, we do have his testimony in the RICO Case,
 11 and I would like to very briefly take you through that.
 12 Zambrano testified there that the Lago Agrio
 13 Judgment was the largest and most significant Decision of
 14 his career. And of course, we know that's true, it's the
 15 largest Judgment in the history of Ecuador by many factors.
 16 He received a lot of attention from the media with respect
 17 to this case. And the day after the Decision was issued,
 18 he appeared with the head of the judicial council at a
 19 press conference to receive praise about this Decision.
 20 So, this was a big deal to him. And he testified in the
 21 RICO Case that he spent a lot of time on the Judgment and
 22 that he wrote every single word of it himself, with no
 23 assistance from anyone else. That was his testimony.
 24 But when he was asked in the RICO Case about the
 25 substance of the Judgment, he couldn't answer even basic

03:18 1 questions about it. He was asked, for example, what theory
 2 of causation did the Judgment rely upon? Well, there is a
 3 long discussion in the Judgment about the various theories
 4 of causation, and then the Judgment comes to a conclusion,
 5 but Zambrano didn't know. He couldn't answer.
 6 He didn't know what the English word "workover"
 7 means, which appears in the Judgment twice. But more than
 8 that, when he was asked the question why does that English
 9 word appear in the Judgment, he couldn't answer that,
 10 either. He didn't know why it's in the Judgment. He had
 11 no explanation for it.
 12 And he didn't know what the term "TPH" means.
 13 Now, the Judgment awarded \$5.4 billion to clean up TPH, so
 14 that was a very significant term in the Judgment, and that
 15 term appears in the Judgment 41 times. So, this was a term
 16 that one ought to be familiar with, if one wrote the
 17 Judgment.
 18 Now, Ecuador's explanation for this in its
 19 Memorial was that, well, he was perhaps confused because
 20 you didn't ask him about the Spanish acronym HTP. You
 21 instead asked him in cross-examination about the English
 22 acronym TPH. But the problem with that is that the
 23 original Spanish version of the Judgment itself uses the
 24 English acronym TPH. It doesn't use the Spanish acronym
 25 HTP. So, if he didn't know what it means, it because he

03:20 1 didn't draft the Judgment.
 2 Well, maybe you might ask, maybe he has something
 3 that he can use to refresh his recollection. Maybe he has
 4 some notes, maybe he has some materials that he could look
 5 at and refresh his recollection about that, so he was asked
 6 about this in the RICO Case. Well, no, in fact, he had to
 7 admit he has no documents that indicate he was the Author
 8 of the Judgment.
 9 Now, he says he made notes, but then he says he
 10 threw those notes away about a year later, even though he
 11 knew that Chevron was appealing the Judgment, and even
 12 though he knew that Chevron was claiming that the Judgment
 13 was ghostwritten. Nevertheless, he just tossed his notes.
 14 But the bottom line is he now has nothing to indicate that
 15 he was the Author of the Judgment, and my suggestion is he
 16 never did.
 17 Now, Mr. Guerra testified that Fajardo had a draft
 18 of the Judgment on Fajardo's computer before the Judgment
 19 was issued, and Mr. Guerra says he saw it. Now, we were
 20 never able to obtain Fajardo's computer or any of his
 21 documents, and Ms. Silbert has gone through that, so I
 22 won't go through it again. But because of that, Zambrano
 23 was asked at the RICO trial, what computer did you draft
 24 the Judgment on? So, he answered "the new one" in his
 25 office. He had an Old Computer from when he became a judge

03:21 1 in 2008 and he obtained a New Computer. So, when he was
 2 asked on what computer did you draft the Judgment, his
 3 answer was on the "new one." He even drew a map of his
 4 office, he showed where the old one was, he showed where
 5 the new one was, he said Ms. Calva sat only at the New
 6 Computer, typed only into the New Computer, that the
 7 Judgment was drafted exclusively and only on the New
 8 Computer, and he testified about that repeatedly, and he
 9 testified about it insistently. He was quite sure, and he
 10 said that he was quite sure because it was the more modern
 11 computer. But we know that testimony is untrue.
 12 He says he started drafting the Judgment in
 13 mid-November 2010, but he only got the New Computer on
 14 December 7th, and Microsoft Word was only open on that New
 15 Computer from the time he got that computer on December 7th
 16 until the Judgment was issued on February 14th, 2011,
 17 Microsoft Word was only open on that computer for a total
 18 of 36 hours, not nearly enough time to draft a 188-page
 19 single-spaced Judgment. It just wasn't possible.
 20 And every draft of the Judgment text that predates
 21 the issuance of the Judgment was saved only on the New
 22 Computer, and Mr. Lynch testified to that, and Mr. Racich
 23 also had to admit it, so the only draft of the Judgment was
 24 saved only on the Old Computer, not the New Computer. So
 25 Mr. Zambrano's testimony on what computer he used to draft

03:23 1 the Judgment was clearly false.
 2 Now, Zambrano also quite frankly lied when he said
 3 that his 18 year old assistant, Ms. Calva, typed almost the
 4 entire Judgment from dictation. He said he never gave her
 5 a document to type from, and he never wrote out in longhand
 6 what he wanted her to type and just handed it her. He said
 7 everything that she typed into the computer was done from
 8 dictation.
 9 But Dr. Leonard, in his Report and his testimony
 10 pointed out the many mistakes in the Plaintiffs' internal
 11 and unfiled documents that were copied verbatim, word for
 12 word, into the Judgment. So, is it credible that Ms. Calva
 13 typed from dictation the very same mistakes, word for word
 14 and comma for comma and period for period and number for
 15 number, exactly as they appear in the Plaintiffs'
 16 documents? What's far more likely is that the Plaintiffs
 17 themselves copied and pasted portions of their internal
 18 documents to create the Judgment.
 19 And Zambrano also lied when he testified about how
 20 the Judgment came to discuss U.S., Australian and English
 21 law. And this is, I think, an important point. He says he
 22 asked Ms. Calva, the 18 year old recent graduate, to do
 23 legal research on the Internet in foreign law and in a
 24 foreign language, and that she is the one who found these
 25 cases from the U.S., Australia and England that are

03:27 1 And the only translation Web site that was
 2 accessed from Zambrano's computer in the relevant period
 3 could not have been used because it was accessed on
 4 January 4th, 2011 but that was after these foreign law
 5 cases appeared in the Providencias, specifically after the
 6 U.S. cases appeared in the Providencias on Zambrano's
 7 computer on December 21, 2010.
 8 And, as a matter of fact, let's talk about the
 9 Providencias. These are partial drafts of the Judgment
 10 found on Zambrano's Old Computer on December 21 and
 11 December 28, 2010. And these are perhaps the most
 12 important aspects of the forensic examination done by
 13 Mr. Lynch. So what do they show?
 14 Well, Ecuador refers you to the metadata, the
 15 Author name and the Last Saved name, but the metadata
 16 cannot show you who Authored the contents of this document,
 17 these Providencias. In fact, you saw that illustrated very
 18 vividly in the cross-examination of Mr. Racich and with
 19 respect to his own Report when he was shown that the
 20 metadata indicates he wasn't the Author of his own Report.
 21 And Mr. Racich, therefore, agreed that, in fact, metadata
 22 cannot tell you who created the content of a document.
 23 Now, Ecuador also points you to the number of
 24 times the Providencias was saved, the so-called "revision
 25 number," but the revision count increases every time you

03:25 1 discussed in the Judgment. That was his testimony in the
 2 RICO Case.
 3 Well, he had to create some story about this
 4 because he doesn't speak English, and the cases aren't
 5 anywhere to be found in the Court Record, but this is a
 6 remarkable proposition, he's saying he decided to go
 7 outside the Court Record and to have his 18-year-old
 8 assistant do legal research in a foreign language, in a
 9 foreign legal system to support the Judgment without giving
 10 the Parties an opportunity to comment on them, and so
 11 Ms. Calva is the one who did this, he says.
 12 Well, Ms. Calva, as we know, conveniently did not
 13 attend the RICO trial, and consequently she was never
 14 cross-examined about any of this, and so we don't have her
 15 testimony.
 16 Now, the forensic evidence also does not support
 17 Zambrano's testimony. The only legal research Web site
 18 that was accessed by Zambrano's computer in the relevant
 19 period was an Ecuadorian Web site called fielweb, but that
 20 Web site cannot access U.S. cases and authorities, and we
 21 brought you an Expert Report that looked at that Web site
 22 and testifies to that, and Ecuador never refuted that,
 23 never brought a counter Expert, so that is unrefuted
 24 testimony that that Web site cannot be used, could not be
 25 used to find these cases.

03:28 1 hit Control Save on the computer, regardless of whether the
 2 document is actually revised or not. And an experienced
 3 typist, I'm told--and I'm not one, but I'm told--that an
 4 experienced typist may hit Control "S" every few seconds to
 5 make sure that they are saving their documents and are not
 6 going to lose them.
 7 In fact, you saw Mr. Lynch's demonstration about
 8 this. He hit the Save button every few seconds to make
 9 sure that his work product wouldn't be lost, and the
 10 document at the end showed 11 revisions in the very few
 11 minutes that he had it open, even though he didn't create
 12 any of the content of that document, it also showed him as
 13 being the Author. He simply cut and pasted from other
 14 documents into the document.
 15 There is no evidence, also, that the number of
 16 Saves that Ecuador tells you about, I think it's 286 saves
 17 in Providencias, there is no evidence that that's related
 18 necessarily to the Judgment text. That relates to the
 19 entire file of Providencias over the life of its existence,
 20 and we know that there were other documents in Providencias
 21 beyond just the Judgment text itself.
 22 Now, the best evidence of what relates to the
 23 Judgment text in this regard is probably what happened
 24 between that period, December 21 and December 28th, when
 25 38 to 45 pages of the Judgment text were added, but there

03:30 1 were only 29 Saves, so the number of Saves simply doesn't
2 tell us very much.
3 There is, however, other forensic evidence that's
4 more meaningful. First is the edit time. What the edit
5 time tells you for these Providencias is that, on
6 December 21st, the first 81 pages of the Judgment, which
7 were later reformatted to become the first 107 pages of the
8 Judgment, were input into Zambrano's Old Computer in only
9 35 hours, less than one week. And if, from the time that
10 file had been created back in October, that's less than 30
11 minutes a day. In fact, depending on whether we use the
12 81 pages or the 107 pages, it means that the Judgment text
13 was input into Zambrano's computer at a rate of somewhere
14 between 20 and 26 minutes per page. And 94 percent of that
15 December 21st Providencias, as it appears on his computer,
16 was never changed thereafter. That means it went in at
17 almost final form with very little editing after that.
18 And between December 21st and December 28th,
19 another 38 to 45 pages were input in only 17 hours at the
20 rate of approximately 27 minutes per page and 96 percent of
21 that text was never changed thereafter.
22 So, those consistent rates are incredibly fast for
23 drafting a complex legal document. And as I said, these
24 154 pages of text were put on the computer in almost
25 completely finished form. That's not how lawyers typically

03:32 1 draft documents, at least not in my experience. And in my
2 experience, lawyers don't draft documents quite that
3 linearly either, at least I know I go back and forth in
4 drafting and editing my documents.
5 So, the edit time, I believe, indicates that the
6 Judgment was not, in fact, drafted on Zambrano's computer
7 but was only input to it.
8 Now, second, both of the Experts agree that the
9 Providencias does show evidence of cutting and pasting or
10 copying and pasting from other documents. Both of the
11 Experts agree to that. And in Slide 290 you see evidence
12 of that on the computer. There were two different fonts
13 and two different formatting styles found in the
14 Providencias on Zambrano's computer. And as I said, both
15 Experts agreed that that indicates there was cutting and
16 pasting from other documents into the Providencias.
17 Now, this is from Page 34, but this evidence of
18 different fonts and different formatting actually goes for
19 about 50 pages on and off in the Providencias.
20 Both Experts also agree that there were at least
21 13 USB Devices or flash drives connected to Zambrano's
22 computer during the relevant period of the drafting of the
23 Judgment, and text could have been copied and pasted from
24 those flash drives into Zambrano's computer without leaving
25 any forensic trail about it. And the same thing can be

03:34 1 done by accessing Hotmail and then cutting and pasting from
2 it. And we know that in the relevant period, Zambrano's
3 computer accessed Hotmail hundreds of times.
4 Now, I want to go to another point about the
5 Providencias, and this is an extremely important point.
6 And that has to do with the substance of what we find on
7 these Providencias and December 21st and December 28th on
8 Zambrano's computer.
9 The Providencias--and let's just take the
10 December 21st Providencias--contains a discussion of
11 causation based on U.S. and Australian case law. Part of
12 that discussion is a discussion of the substantial factor
13 test, and you see it on the right-hand side of the screen
14 from the Providencias. And you see at the bottom of that
15 discussion in the Providencias, a citation to two U.S.
16 cases: Whitley versus Philip-Morris and Rutherford versus
17 Owens-Illinois. Those cases are nowhere found in the Court
18 record. Mr. Juola has testified about that. They are,
19 however, found in one place, and that is in the Moodie
20 Memo. You have on the left-hand side of your screen, a
21 discussion from the Moodie Memo of the substantial factor
22 test and citations to exactly those same two California
23 cases, Rutherford and Owens-Illinois.
24 So, what you see is U.S. case law, California case
25 law, being cited both in the Moodie Memo for propositions

03:35 1 about the substantial factor test and also being cited in
2 the Providencias on Zambrano's computer in support of
3 exactly the same legal proposition about the substantial
4 factor test.
5 And no one has suggested that the Moodie Memo was
6 ever filed in the Court Record. It's certainly not found
7 there.
8 So, is this just a coincidence? Did the 18-year
9 old Ms. Calva just happen to find exactly the same legal
10 proposition supported by exactly the same two U.S. cases
11 that are found in the Plaintiffs' Memo? Well, before we
12 answer that question, there's substantially more.
13 The Providencias, on December 21st also cites to
14 nine other U.S. Court cases and U.S. Legal Authorities in
15 support of certain legal propositions. Those nine U.S.
16 authorities are also found nowhere in the Court Record, and
17 that was also confirmed by Mr. Juola in a supplemental
18 review of the Record.
19 And I invite you to please compare the Plaintiffs'
20 unfiled Erion Memo, which has to do with the merger issue,
21 with the Providencias, and what you will find is exactly
22 the same legal propositions supported by exactly the same
23 U.S. Legal Authorities in both documents.
24 On Slide 295, you see, for example, references to
25 patent injustice in both documents supported by exactly the

03:37 1 same U.S. case, the Penn Central Case, in exactly the same
2 citation form. And then you see a reference to manifest
3 injustice in both documents supported by a reference to the
4 Acushnet River Case. And note that in both documents, the
5 Acushnet River citation is an incomplete citation, but it
6 appears in exactly the same form at exactly the same place
7 in both of those documents.

8 In the next slide, you see the same pattern
9 reoccurring with exactly the same legal proposition in the
10 Erion Memo and in the December 21st Providencias supported
11 by exactly the same U.S. case citations in exactly the same
12 form. And you see that again in the next slide, only here
13 it's not a reference to case law, it's a reference to the
14 same U.S. legal treatise, the Fletcher Treatise and the
15 Encyclopedia Private Corporations in support of the same
16 legal proposition, but note the citation form again.
17 Meade, the Encyclopedia Private Corporations, Section 7122,
18 and exactly the same reference, exactly the same publisher,
19 exactly the same year, exactly the same section number in
20 both documents.

21 And on Slide 298, you see again the same legal
22 proposition, here supported in the Erion Memo by a
23 reference to the California Civil Code Section 3521.

24 And what do we find in the Providencias on
25 Zambrano's computer? We find the same legal proposition

03:41 1 frankly, what's far more plausible is that the Plaintiffs
2 themselves ghostwrote the Judgment using their own
3 documents which they had before them.

4 You have seen reference to the opinion of
5 Dr. Gerald McMenamin who found from the stylistic analysis
6 of the Judgment, that it's highly probable that the
7 Judgment had multiple Authors and that Zambrano himself had
8 very little to do with the writing of the Judgment.

9 Now, the timing of Zambrano's testimony in RICO is
10 also highly suspect. I'm not going to spend much time on
11 this. My time, I think, is running very quickly, so I will
12 hurry this along. But Zambrano was dismissed as a judge in
13 February 2012 for "inexcusable judicial error" revealing
14 "notorious ineptitude or carelessness" in the
15 administration of justice. He was suspected of accepting a
16 bribe in a drug trafficking case and releasing the drug
17 trafficker, but he was dismissed as a judge for this basis.

18 He was also dismissed as a judge as a second
19 sanction three months later, again finding him guilty of
20 "inexcusable judicial error."

21 And we know that Zambrano had a history of people
22 accusing him of soliciting bribes. There are literally
23 dozens of people who had accused him of that, and we know
24 that the Napo Bar Association itself requested that the
25 Prosecutor General suspend him for soliciting bribes.

03:39 1 supported by a reference to the California Code
2 Section 3521. It's exactly the same. And that Legal
3 Authority, again, is not in the record, and no one has
4 suggested that the Erion Memo is anywhere in the Court
5 Record.

6 So, is it plausible--is it plausible--that the
7 18-year old recent graduate, Ms. Calva, did legal research
8 in a foreign language, in a foreign legal system and just
9 happened to find exactly the same U.S. cases and Australian
10 cases that you find cited in the Plaintiffs' internal
11 memos, or is it far more likely that the Plaintiffs used
12 their own documents, which they had before them, to
13 ghostwrite the Judgment?

14 Now, what is Zambrano's explanation for this. He
15 has given an explanation of sorts in his RICO Declaration
16 at Section 16. And his explanation is: Well, the stork
17 just left these documents at the foot of his office door
18 overnight. I mentioned that the documents related to the
19 case that were not incorporated into the process were left
20 at the door of my Office of the Court. This was relevant
21 information that I realized could be of use in my Decision.
22 That's his explanation.

23 If that happened, it's a violation of Ecuadorian
24 law. It means that he used non-transparent documents never
25 filed in the Court Record to write the Judgment, but quite

03:42 1 But what happened is that, after he was dismissed
2 as a judge, he was unemployed for a year until he signed
3 his RICO Declaration, and then the very next month he
4 testifies he was invited to a judge as a legal adviser at
5 the refinery, which is majority owned and controlled by
6 Petroecuador.

7 But when he was asked in the RICO Case about his
8 employment, he knew very little about his employer. He
9 was, however, well paid. In fact, he's paid more as a
10 legal advisor to the refinery than he was paid as a judge.
11 He was paid more than the General Counsel, and he was paid
12 more than the position advertised.

13 So, is Zambrano's testimony in RICO credible? I
14 won't go through the factors. I did this in the opening
15 statement. His testimony clearly is incredible, and that's
16 exactly the finding that was made by the only fact finder,
17 the only decision-maker who saw him actually testify, and
18 that was Judge Kaplan in the RICO Case. He found that
19 Zambrano was unpersuasive for a host of reasons, including
20 the many inconsistencies in his own testimony, and between
21 his testimony and other documents and between his testimony
22 in the Hearing and his testimony in his deposition. He
23 found Zambrano was a remarkably unpersuasive witness.

24 And with that, I will conclude my presentation so
25 that hopefully I can keep us on time.

03:44 1 Thank you, Mr. President.
 2 PRESIDENT VEEDER: I think this is where you
 3 suggested we take the mid-afternoon break.
 4 MR. BISHOP: It is.
 5 PRESIDENT VEEDER: We will do that. We will come
 6 back at 4:00. Thank you.
 7 (Brief recess.)
 8 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Let's resume.
 9 Before we start, we've received a draft, which
 10 looks as though it's an agreed form of wording for our
 11 order; is that correct?
 12 We ask the Claimants first.
 13 MR. BISHOP: Yes, it is.
 14 PRESIDENT VEEDER: And the Respondent?
 15 MR. BLOOM: I can confirm that, yes.
 16 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you for that.
 17 In the meantime, as you will probably see, we're
 18 circulating the Draft Procedural Order except for the
 19 security protocol, just to be initialed tonight. We'll
 20 have a signing ceremony before 9:30 tomorrow where it will
 21 be put to bed, signed, countersigned, whatever, and we can
 22 then move on from the site--from the site order, but that's
 23 before 9:30 tomorrow, so don't forget to bring the Security
 24 Protocol, which I hope is going to be not a problem.
 25 MS. RENFROE: We've made progress on that, and we

04:02 1 expect to be able to present that to you tomorrow morning.
 2 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you very much.
 3 Please.
 4 MR. KEHOE: Thank you, Mr. President, Professor
 5 Naón, Professor Lowe.
 6 Chevron seeks combination of remedies with the
 7 most important being declaratory relief which you see
 8 listed first.
 9 The specific Declarations that are needed to help
 10 white out the consequences of Ecuador's wrongful acts are
 11 enumerated in Claimants' submission of January 14, 2015, at
 12 Paragraph 435, and I've copied them on to this slide for
 13 you at 311.
 14 The first four declarations focus on the
 15 wrongfulness of Ecuador's acts under international law and
 16 requests five through nine relate to the legal consequences
 17 of that unlawful conduct under international law, and ten
 18 relates to monetary damages.
 19 I will provide an introductory overview right now
 20 of Chevron's main points concerning remedies and then I'll
 21 move to the main argument which addresses these issues in
 22 more detail. I ask you to please stop me any time during
 23 my presentation with any questions that you may have.
 24 As this Tribunal knows at this late stage in the
 25 proceedings, the reason that Chevron requires the various

04:04 1 declarations and the different types of declarations that
 2 it seeks is because Ecuador will not remedy the wrongdoing
 3 at its roots in Ecuador under Ecuadorian law. If Ecuador
 4 would honor its international obligations and obey a
 5 directive from this Tribunal to take all measures necessary
 6 to wipe out the consequences of the Lago Agrio Judgment,
 7 then some of these Declarations that Chevron seeks might
 8 not be necessary, but that's not case, and I ask you to
 9 please keep this critically important fact in mind as you
 10 listen to my remedies argument today and as you deliberate
 11 on this important issue after we've all gone home.
 12 In Request Number 1, Chevron asks for a
 13 declaration that, by issuing the Judgment, Ecuador has both
 14 committed a denial of justice under customary international
 15 law and also breached provisions of the Treaty. The
 16 Tribunal may question whether it's necessary to declare a
 17 denial of justice in addition to a treaty breach, and the
 18 simple answer is, yes, gentlemen, it is necessary. If you
 19 find that a denial of justice has occurred, we ask that you
 20 declare it in order to award full reparation that
 21 international law principle requires.
 22 In the Commercial Cases between Chevron and
 23 Ecuador, the distinction was meaningless from a remedies
 24 perspective, so full reparation could be given without
 25 deciding the question of denial of justice. But here the

04:05 1 distinction is meaningful, potentially dispositively
 2 meaningful to recognition and enforcement courts around the
 3 world where this Judgment is being taken and will be taken
 4 for recognition, enforcement, and execution, and I'll
 5 expand on that shortly with examples of why this
 6 distinction is meaningful.
 7 The Second Declaration relates to the breach by
 8 Ecuador of Settlement and Release Agreements, which the
 9 Tribunal has deferred until after hearing the Track 2
 10 evidence of fraud. Having heard the evidence over the past
 11 three weeks and having heard Mr. Coriell's closing remarks
 12 today, this Declaration is now ripe and ready to be ruled
 13 upon in Chevron's favor.
 14 Declarations three and four are self-explanatory,
 15 they also relate to declarations of the wrongfulness of the
 16 conduct. Then we move down to the list, four through nine
 17 on the list which are declarations that describe the
 18 consequences of Ecuador's illegal conduct under
 19 international law arising from the violations and the
 20 breaches listed in one through four.
 21 Now, this category of remedies five through nine
 22 was the subject of a question from the Tribunal last
 23 Friday. You asked whether or not the jurisdictional
 24 authority to issue declarations of consequences of
 25 Ecuador's conduct under international law was vested with

04:06 1 you, should you find that, indeed, they did commit the
 2 wrongful acts found in one, two, three or four, and again,
 3 the answer is yes, and I'm going to go through that in
 4 great detail with you. And I would argue, sirs, that not
 5 only are declarations four through nine well within your
 6 jurisdictional authority to grant, but with due respect,
 7 they are required under principles of international
 8 reparations law to wipe out the consequences of Ecuador's
 9 act. The reason that these declarations are especially
 10 necessary in this case is not only because Ecuador has
 11 unleashed this extraordinarily egregious \$9.5 million
 12 Judgment out into the international system, but importantly
 13 because Ecuador has stated unequivocally that it will not
 14 take measures to wipe out the consequences of the Acts.
 15 Ecuador will not take all measures necessary to nullify and
 16 negate this Judgment at its roots, even if directed by this
 17 Tribunal to do so.
 18 In its Supplemental Rejoinder of March 17, 2015,
 19 Ecuador states, "It is common ground that the Judgment is
 20 enforceable under Ecuadorian law." And they go on to say,
 21 "If the Tribunal were to order the Republic to nullify the
 22 Lago Agrio Judgment, as the Claimants demand, Ecuador would
 23 have to violate its human rights obligations, Constitution,
 24 and procedural laws. And for this reason alone,
 25 nullification by Ecuador is not an available remedy in the

04:09 1 successful breach in international law in a moment.
 2 This Tribunal knows that if the Judgment is the
 3 product of a denial of justice under the Treaty, the
 4 Judgment has no legal effect under international law. Same
 5 result if it's a breach of denial of justice or the Treaty.
 6 There is no impediment whatsoever to declaring that in your
 7 Award. And Ecuador, for its part, shouldn't be heard to
 8 complain about these declarations because no one is allowed
 9 to take advantage in the law of their own wrongful act. As
 10 Ecuador seeks to do here, by opposing the declarations of
 11 nullification under international law, that its conduct has
 12 necessitated because it won't do it under its domestic law,
 13 which would be a better result, frankly.
 14 As to injunctive relief, Ecuador states in that
 15 same Paragraph 417 of its Memorial, that because Ecuador
 16 will disregard a directive from the Tribunal to nullify the
 17 Judgment in Ecuador, an order directing it to do so is not
 18 an available remedy to Ecuador in this case, and we
 19 disagree. We believe that the injunctive requests that
 20 Chevron has asked for is an available remedy, and Ecuador's
 21 unilateral decision to preemptively breach such an order
 22 does not make it any less available to Chevron. And we ask
 23 that you do order Ecuador to take all measures necessary to
 24 render the Judgment null and void within and without
 25 Ecuador, even though we all know that Ecuador will ignore

04:08 1 case."
 2 So, while Ecuador superficially goes through the
 3 motions of participating in these international arbitration
 4 proceedings, it simultaneously makes a mockery of them by
 5 stating in advance that it will not honor its international
 6 obligation to eradicate the Judgment if the Tribunal orders
 7 Ecuador to do so. So, this means that the Final Decision
 8 maker concerning the validity of this Judgment is actually
 9 not this Tribunal, which has been vested with the authority
 10 and the jurisdiction to decide this dispute with finality,
 11 but rather it is the trial court judges and the appellate
 12 judges sitting in different courts around the world. As a
 13 result of this unfortunate reality in which we find
 14 ourselves, if the Tribunal determines that a denial of
 15 justice and treaty breaches have occurred, the Tribunal
 16 should issue declarations that state the legal consequences
 17 of those findings under international law just as we have
 18 requested in declarations numbers four through nine. If
 19 the Tribunal does not issue these declarations, it becomes
 20 more likely that the Lago Agrio Judgment will be recognized
 21 and will be enforced. And in that eventuality, full
 22 reparation required by international law clearly will not
 23 have been afforded to Chevron. Ecuador will have succeeded
 24 in successfully breaching its international law
 25 obligations. And I'm going to come back to this point of

04:11 1 your Award because in order for this Tribunal in
 2 combination with the Declarations that we seek collectively
 3 and in combination may enable Chevron to resist recognition
 4 and enforcement of this Judgment.
 5 The third form of relief is monetary claims which
 6 will be addressed in Track 3. Professor Paulsson will
 7 follow me to address Ecuador's novel monetary setoff theory
 8 when I complete my presentation, so I won't spend any real
 9 time on it now, except to emphasize one particularly
 10 important point that does tie into my argument, which is
 11 that Ecuador's monetary setoff theory has no relevance or
 12 relation to Chevron's request for declaratory and
 13 injunctive relief. Setoff applies only to Chevron's
 14 monetary claim for indemnification against Ecuador should
 15 the Lago Agrio Plaintiffs successfully execute upon the
 16 Judgment. It's an important fact, and it's important not
 17 to confuse and conflate the different forms of remedies
 18 that Chevron seeks as Ecuador has done in its written
 19 submissions and which it may do tomorrow in its Closing
 20 Argument, so I highlight that for the Tribunal.
 21 Okay. Now, down to the basics, the fundamental
 22 principles of reparation, this Tribunal does not need to be
 23 told that under international law, reparation must, as far
 24 as possible, wipe out the consequences of the illegal act
 25 and re-establish the situation which, in all probability,

<p>Sheet 56</p> <p style="text-align: right;">2715</p> <p>04:12 1 would have existed if the Act had not been committed. With 2 the goal and purpose from Chorzow Factory of reparations to 3 provide full reparation for the injury and to wipe out the 4 consequences of the illegal act to the extent possible, the 5 next step, of course, is to determine the forms of 6 reparation that are available to this Tribunal to 7 accomplish the result of full reparation. 8 We see in Article 4, forms of reparation. Full 9 reparation for the injury caused by the internationally 10 wrongful act shall take the form of restitution, 11 compensation, and satisfaction either singly or in 12 combination in accordance with the provisions of this 13 chapter. 14 The official Commentary notes there is--that 15 wiping out the consequences of the wrongful act may thus 16 require some or all forms of reparation to be provided, 17 depending on the type and the extent of the injury that has 18 been caused. 19 Now, this Tribunal has noted that Chevron's 20 allegations against Ecuador are among the gravest 21 accusations that one can advance against a modern State 22 subject to the rule of law. You reiterated this sentiment 23 at the end of the day last Friday. These are very serious 24 allegations that we make, but we stand by them. 25 The evidentiary phase of this proceeding is now at</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">2717</p> <p>04:15 1 repeating here because declarations are critically 2 important to the analysis in these proceedings for both 3 Track 1 and Track 2, so he notes that the most usual remedy 4 for an international law violation is undoubtedly 5 declaratory relief. The emphasis was in his original. He 6 notes that a declaration may be the only remedy of relative 7 effectiveness which no judge or arbitrator can reasonably 8 withhold. 9 And he astutely observed that a declaration would 10 not only vindicate the innocent party in the eyes of the 11 world, but might also serve as a defense or as res judicata 12 in a proceeding or have some value for the victim. It's 13 almost as though Dr. Mann predicted the circumstances of 14 this case. 15 And this brings us to Chevron's request for both a 16 declaration that Ecuador committed a denial of justice in 17 violation of customary international law as well as a 18 declaration that Ecuador breached the Bilateral Investment 19 Treaty. This is request number one, and breached the 20 Treaty in a number of ways breaching the Settlement and 21 Release Agreement, breaching the effective means provision, 22 breaching the fair and equal treatment provision, they're 23 all included within the Treaty breach category. 24 A declaration that Ecuador's conduct in the Lago 25 Agrio Judgment litigation and Judgment as a matter of</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">2716</p> <p>04:14 1 an end, and if Chevron has proven these grave and serious 2 allegations to you, then only an equally serious 3 combination of remedies will be capable of providing the 4 full reparation that is needed to wipe out the consequences 5 of Ecuador's conduct, not only because of its underlying 6 act of rendering the fraudulent judgment, but also because 7 it won't remedy the wrong itself, even if ordered to. 8 Now, while the character and the extent of 9 Ecuador's unlawful conduct both during and after the Lago 10 Agrio Litigation is uncommon, I daresay unprecedented, one 11 of the most common modalities to address wrongful conduct 12 is satisfaction, which is what we're asking for in the form 13 of a declaration of wrongfulness of the Act by the 14 competent court or tribunal. This would encompass both 15 denial of justice and treaty breaches. 16 And, of course, the Tribunal may render 17 declarations under its own authority, its own 18 jurisdictional authority, to determine the lawfulness of 19 the conduct in question and make legal findings as a 20 necessary part of the process of deciding the case, which 21 this Tribunal is well aware and, in fact, has done when 22 issuing your Interim Measures Award. 23 These excerpts from Dr. Francis Mann's seminal 24 publication are familiar to you. I referenced some of them 25 during the Track 1B argument on remedies, but they bear</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">2718</p> <p>04:16 1 customary international law and denial of justice is, of 2 course, different to some degree than a declaration that 3 Ecuador breached the effective means provision of the 4 Treaty. And the Tribunal may be tempted to decide this 5 case on the more narrow basis of only Treaty breach rather 6 than on both grounds if you perceive no meaningful 7 difference between the two; deciding on a narrower ground 8 is a wise thing sometimes, but only if it doesn't make a 9 difference. Here it makes a difference and, as I said, 10 potentially a dispositive one because recognition and 11 enforcement courts around a the world may perceive a 12 difference between the two. 13 In recognition and enforcement proceedings, 14 Chevron must convince a domestic court to give no legal 15 effect to a judgment that has been issued by the courts of 16 a sovereign nation, a judgment that has not only been 17 blessed by that State's entire relevant judiciary, but also 18 endorsed by the country's President and other government 19 officials who are lobbying consistently and earnestly for 20 its recognition and enforcement. Mr. Bishop described that 21 to you this morning. 22 Chevron, of course, will raise legal defenses in 23 these proceedings. The relative strength or weakness of 24 these defenses, the success of these defenses may very well 25 depend on the decisions that this Arbitration Tribunal</p>

04:18 1 makes with respect to the remedies that you are going to
2 provide Chevron with respect to the declarations that
3 you're willing to issue. And on this important point, we
4 believe it's more likely that a foreign recognition and
5 enforcement court will refuse to recognize the fraudulent
6 Lago Agrio Judgment if this Tribunal declares a denial of
7 justice, the embodiment of a denial of justice, more so
8 than if this Tribunal finds a breach of a bilateral treaty
9 to which the enforcement State is not a party.

10 I'm going to provide just two examples where the
11 distinction of these two different types of declarations
12 that we seek may be meaningful to a foreign Court, and the
13 first arises under Article 16 of the ILC Draft Articles on
14 assisting, aiding and assisting the Commission of an
15 internationally wrongful act.

16 Now, this Tribunal need not decide this defense to
17 recognition and enforcement, of course. You have more than
18 enough to decide, but I am going through it to illustrate
19 why a declaration of denial of justice will be more
20 valuable to Chevron in enforcement proceedings than a
21 declaration that Ecuador has breached the Treaty.

22 Under Article 16 of the ILC Articles, a State that
23 aids or assists another State in the commission of an
24 internationally wrongful act is internationally responsible
25 for the consequences of such assistance if the State aids

04:19 1 and assists or assists with knowledge of the circumstances
2 of the internationally wrongful act, and the underlying act
3 would be wrongful if committed by the State. Under this
4 analysis, the assisting State obviously does not itself
5 engage in the underlying wrongful conduct in question. Its
6 responsibility arises simply from the fact that it
7 facilitates the wrongful act.

8 Now, these principles of Article 16 are rules of
9 customary international law. The ICJ held this in the
10 Bosnia Genocide Case, which is a new legal authority
11 CLA-640. As an esteemed international law scholar and
12 Professor at Oxford University stated in a speech to the
13 Japanese Society of International Law in Kyoto on
14 October 13, 2001, just a month after the terrorist attack
15 on the World Trade Center, Article 16 represents a
16 significant development in what one might call the moral
17 sophistication of law. It is a decisive step in the
18 direction of a more mature, more moral conception of State
19 responsibility. And that is CLA-633. Hopefully we've
20 handed it out and you have these in front of you.

21 PRESIDENT VEEDER: We have the English translation
22 but not the Japanese.

23 (Laughter.)

24 MR. KEHOE: The first page was in Japanese, but I
25 think that it was just a placeholder. Thank you.

04:21 1 If the Tribunal determines and declares in its
2 Award that the Lago Agrio Judgment is the embodiment of a
3 denial of justice under customary international law, then a
4 recognition and enforcement court presented with your Award
5 might conclude that both elements of Article 16 would be
6 satisfied. If the State, through its courts, were to
7 recognize and enforce the Lago Agrio Judgment so that the
8 Lago Agrio Plaintiffs and their funders could execute upon
9 it. Your first--your Award just walking through the
10 tautology, would declare Ecuador's issuance of the Judgment
11 to be a denial of justice. Let's just suppose and, thus,
12 an internationally wrongful act by Ecuador.

13 Second, Chevron would present your Award to a
14 recognition and enforcement court so that the foreign State
15 would have knowledge of the circumstances of Ecuador's
16 internationally wrongful act that you declare.

17 And, finally, international law bars all States
18 from committing denials of justice under customary
19 international law, so that State's issuance or recognition
20 and--no, issuance of the fraudulent judgment would be
21 wrongful if that State were to have done it itself.

22 So, under a mature and moral conception of its own
23 international responsibility, a State is highly unlikely to
24 recognize a foreign Judgment in this case--the Lago Agrio
25 Judgment from Ecuador--that could cause a State to come

04:22 1 into breach of its own international law obligations under
2 Article 16. This same State may not reach the same
3 conclusion if the Tribunal declares only a breach of a
4 provision of a bilateral investment treaty to which the
5 State is not a party.

6 Now, we would argue that it should. We would
7 argue, of course, to the enforcement court that they should
8 find an Article 16 risk for enforcing your Award if you
9 declare only a breach of the Treaty and not customary
10 international law. But, frankly, that's a weaker argument
11 than the customary international law argument, and Chevron
12 should not be put in a position of having to advance a
13 weaker argument if you find that we have proven a denial of
14 justice. That's a principle of reparation, full
15 reparation, under international law.

16 A second example, a declaration of a denial of
17 justice might also provide Chevron with a stronger public
18 policy argument to resist recognition and enforcement of
19 the Lago Agrio Judgment than a Declaration of Treaty
20 breach. As the Tribunal noted in the Worldwide Duty Free
21 versus Kenya Case, the concept of public policy, ordre
22 publique is rooted in most, if not all, legal systems.
23 Violation of the enforcing State's own domestic public
24 policy is grounds, of course, for refusing recognition or
25 enforcement of foreign Judgments or Awards. That's what

04:24 1 this Tribunal held. The domestic public policy of every
 2 State that observes the rule of law prohibits conduct that
 3 constitutes a violation of customary international law.
 4 Now, again, Chevron would likely make this same
 5 public policy argument to an enforcement court if this
 6 Tribunal stops short of declaring a denial of justice, and
 7 hopefully it will carry the day if that is all you give
 8 Chevron as reparation in the form of a declaration from
 9 these proceedings. But with due respect, Members of the
 10 Tribunal, again, if Chevron has proven a denial of justice
 11 in these proceedings, you should declare it.
 12 Under settled principles of awarding full
 13 reparation for an international wrong and Ecuador's refusal
 14 to wipe out the consequences of its act entitles Chevron to
 15 declarations both of denial of justice and Treaty breach if
 16 Chevron has proven them both. And we maintain that we
 17 have.
 18 Let me stop there because I'm turning to another
 19 topic and just ask if anyone has any questions.
 20 Okay. I'm turning from Chevron's request.
 21 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Please continue.
 22 MR. KEHOE: From Chevron's request for a
 23 declaration of denial of justice and treaty breaches,
 24 requests numbers one through four on Slide 311, to the
 25 Declarations that state the consequences under

04:25 1 international law of those breaches.
 2 And we see, for example, five, six, and seven. In
 3 request number five, Chevron asks for declarations that the
 4 Judgment is a nullity as a matter of international law.
 5 Request number 6, the Judgment is unlawful and consequently
 6 devoid of any legal effect, and we should have written,
 7 "under international law." That's what we mean by that.
 8 And the Judgment is a violation of Chevron's right under
 9 the BIT, and is not entitled to enforcement within or
 10 without Ecuador.
 11 Now, these three declarations flow normally and
 12 naturally under international law from a finding by you
 13 that Ecuador has committed a denial of justice or treaty
 14 breaches or both. Under settled international law, Members
 15 of the Tribunal, a wrongful act cannot be allowed any
 16 effect in the law. It would be odd if wrongful acts in the
 17 law were to be treated as anything other than null and
 18 void, and these are not my words. Dr. Mann made these
 19 unremarkable observations more than 30 years ago, and Sir
 20 Hersch Lauterpacht made a similar observation 30 years
 21 before that when he noted that the absence of more direct
 22 means of enforcement tend to endow the principles of
 23 nullity of illegal acts with particular importance in the
 24 international sphere.
 25 So, the question the Tribunal seemed to be asking

04:27 1 last Friday is why should the Tribunal take the extra step
 2 of stating or declaring its Award that Ecuador's denial of
 3 justice and/or treaty breaches cause the Lago Agrio
 4 Judgment to be null and devoid of legal effect. And as I
 5 mentioned earlier, the answer here follows on the same
 6 theme that Chevron has been emphasizing forcefully in these
 7 proceedings after Ecuador released this fraudulent judgment
 8 into the international system. We request these additional
 9 causation declarations because they will assist Chevron in
 10 resisting recognition and enforcement of the fraudulent
 11 judgment and because these declarations center on
 12 international law issues, an area within this Tribunal's
 13 jurisdiction and area of expertise. Local judges across
 14 the globe undoubtedly will be assisted and guided by your
 15 Award in their analysis of the Judgment and its
 16 implications under international law.
 17 You have the jurisdictional authority to make
 18 these declarations stating the legal consequences including
 19 nullification. Logic dictates that international tribunals
 20 may make declarations of international law, and the weight
 21 of authority supports your right to do so. Ecuador has not
 22 pointed to a single case, a single authority, which
 23 suggests that you don't.
 24 Professor Paulsson, who wrote his authoritative
 25 work on denial of justice years before he became counsel in

04:28 1 this case, as he mentioned this morning, stated that an
 2 obligation placed on a foreigner by a civil Judgment
 3 vitiated by a denial of justice may simply be annulled by
 4 the relevant international jurisdiction, as in the Martini
 5 case.
 6 Professor Crawford, as he was then, made this
 7 important point during our Track 1 Hearing in London in
 8 November 2012, when he said international law supports this
 9 Tribunal's authority to nullify the Judgment as a matter of
 10 international law and as in breach of Ecuador's treaty
 11 obligations. You have the authority to wipe out the
 12 consequences of unlawful acts by issuing factual and legal
 13 findings that may prevent enforcement of the Judgment. As
 14 always, I have discovered, Professor Crawford was
 15 eloquently simple in reducing to just a few words a
 16 complicated issue that this Tribunal faces.
 17 International precedent for declaring Judgments to
 18 be null and void exists. Other tribunals have done it.
 19 They've issued declarations nullifying legal decisions
 20 under international law. The Tribunal in the Idler versus
 21 Venezuela case declared the proceedings that denied
 22 Mr. Idler due process a nullity. In Barcelona Traction,
 23 Judge Fitzmaurice had no trouble concluding the same in his
 24 Concurring Opinion. And in the In Re: Martini case that
 25 Professor Paulsson referenced in his book, the

04:30 1 international tribunal put a fine point on this issue when
 2 it said that although the Martini company had not made
 3 payment that was imposed upon it by the Venezuelan Court,
 4 the obligation continued to exist in law. As a consequence
 5 of the international tribunal's determination that the
 6 payment obligations were imposed in violation of
 7 international law, the Tribunal pronounced their annulment
 8 emphasizing that an illegal act has been committed, and it
 9 applied the principle that the consequences of an illegal
 10 act must be effaced.

11 Now, more recently, in May 2010, we have an award
 12 from an ICSID tribunal comprised of Professor Michael
 13 Reisman, Professor Ahmed Al Koshari and Yves Fortier as
 14 President in the ATA Construction versus Jordan Case,
 15 together with the clarifying decision on interpretation
 16 dated March 7, 2011, which we have submitted as CLA-637 in
 17 response to your question concerning your jurisdictional
 18 authority to issue declarations nullifying the Lago Agrio
 19 Judgment under international law. In that case brought
 20 under the Jordan-Turkey BIT, the Tribunal found that the
 21 retroactive application of a new Jordanian arbitration law
 22 by the Jordanian Court of Appeals which had sought to
 23 extinguish the arbitration clause in a contract between the
 24 investor and the Jordanian State was unlawful. That was
 25 their conclusion. The Tribunal went on to apply the

04:33 1 of equity to set aside fraudulently begotten judgments is
 2 necessary to the integrity of the courts, for tampering
 3 with the administration of justice in this matter involves
 4 far more than an injury to a single litigant. It is a
 5 wrong against the institutions set up to protect and
 6 safeguard the public.

7 Once again, the remarkable and unprecedented facts
 8 of this case make the case for declarations of
 9 nullification even more compelling because here the
 10 institution itself, the Ecuadorian Court, participated in
 11 the fraud. This wasn't a fraud on the Court that we're
 12 used to seeing. This is a massive fraud with the Court
 13 with its blessing, its active support, and its intimate
 14 involvement.

15 The second form of relief that Chevron seeks is
 16 restitution, which would come in the form of an affirmative
 17 injunction or directive to Ecuador to take all measures
 18 necessary to wipe out the consequences of its wrongful
 19 conduct. I've listed them on Slide 335. They also appear
 20 in our Track 2 Reply Memorial at Page 223. I won't go
 21 through them. Various tribunals have taken this approach
 22 as an alternative to declaring the underlying illegal act a
 23 nullity.

24 And I reviewed these cases with the Tribunal in
 25 Track 1B, so I won't belabor them here again, but I would

04:31 1 Chorzow Factory standard, just as we ask you to do here,
 2 and that Tribunal wiped out the consequences of the
 3 unlawful act by negating it as a matter of international
 4 law.

5 The Tribunal went further and ordered the
 6 Jordanian Court proceedings over the dispute to be
 7 immediately and unconditionally terminated with no
 8 possibility to engage further in judicial proceedings in
 9 Jordan or anywhere else on the substance of the dispute.
 10 Obviously, the facts of the cases differ, but the point
 11 that I'm making here, Members of the Tribunal, is that the
 12 strong weight of authority supports your authority to
 13 declare the nullity, the negation of the Lago Agrio
 14 Judgment.

15 And on the point about facts being different in
 16 each case, while no legal act can be allowed any effect in
 17 the law, the case for clear declarations of negation and
 18 nullification is particularly compelling for a finding of
 19 fraud in a court judgment because this type of fraud is the
 20 antithesis of good faith, indeed of law itself.

21 Wiping out the consequences of a fraudulent
 22 judgment is a universal principle, both internationally and
 23 in countries that adhere to the rule of law. As we see
 24 from the quoted language by the United States Supreme Court
 25 in the Chambers versus NASCO Inc. case, the historic power

04:34 1 like to take a moment on the recent jurisdictional
 2 immunities case, Germany versus Italy, because the ICJ
 3 there not only declared the underlying acts of the Italian
 4 courts to have violated international law when they
 5 disregarded Germany's sovereign immunity, but they went on
 6 to state that, for purposes of awarding remedies, the Court
 7 was required to declare the consequences of its ruling.

8 That's the word they used. Germany asked the Court to
 9 order Italy to take all steps to ensure that all of the
 10 decisions of the Italian courts infringing on German
 11 sovereignty would become unenforceable, and the Court
 12 states that it understood that to mean that the relevant
 13 decisions should cease to have effect. And the Court
 14 agreed, saying it must uphold Germany's request in that
 15 regard. The domestic court judgments that were still in
 16 force must cease to have effect, and the effect of those
 17 decisions must be reversed in a way to re-establish the
 18 situation that existed before the wrongful acts were
 19 committed. Quintessential Chorzow Factory which we're
 20 arguing. In this jurisdictional immunities case, the good
 21 faith compliance by Italy to the award was assumed, and
 22 that assumption was well-founded because Italy's courts
 23 thereafter did, indeed, take measures to reverse the
 24 consequences of what its courts had wrongfully done. But
 25 in the case before this Tribunal, good-faith compliance by

04:36 1 Ecuador cannot be assumed. We start with Ecuador's past
 2 conduct in these very proceedings.
 3 In its second Interim Measures Award the Tribunal
 4 ordered Ecuador to take all measures necessary to prevent
 5 recognition and enforcement of the Judgment within and
 6 without Ecuador, including a specific directive that
 7 Ecuador refrain from issuing the certificate of
 8 enforceability.
 9 A few months later, in May and June of 2012, the
 10 Lago Agrio Plaintiffs instituted the enforcement
 11 proceedings, as you will recall, and you'll hear from
 12 Mr. Pate in Canada and Brazil.
 13 In August 2012, rejecting this Tribunal's general
 14 and specific directives, Ecuador went ahead and issued the
 15 certificate making the Judgment final. Emboldened, the
 16 Plaintiffs followed suit with a new filing in Argentina in
 17 October 2012. The Tribunal, this Tribunal, convened an
 18 emergency Hearing in London in November 2012; and, at that
 19 Hearing, you invited Ecuador to intervene in the foreign
 20 proceedings to prevent execution on the Lago Agrio Judgment
 21 while this arbitration was pending. Ecuador asked to
 22 respond to your invitation in writing, which it did two
 23 months later after giving the issue some thought. And what
 24 they said is this: "Under the domestic legal regime, there
 25 is no conceivable basis for the Republic to interfere in

04:39 1 Again, Ecuador has no standing at this juncture to
 2 challenge Chevron's requests for the Declarations that it
 3 requires from this Tribunal under international law for
 4 full reparation because Ecuador's recalcitrance has made
 5 these declarations necessary. Ecuador can't take advantage
 6 of its own wrongdoing. No one can be allowed to take
 7 advantage of its own wrongdoing in the law.
 8 I conclude my remarks this afternoon, Gentlemen,
 9 with an observation of the importance of your decision on
 10 remedies in this case. The form of reparation that you
 11 award is important to Chevron for obvious reasons. The
 12 harm to Chevron from the Lago Agrio Litigation and Judgment
 13 cannot be overstated as this Tribunal noted in one of its
 14 interim measures awards, but your decision may also be
 15 important to the evolution of international law itself due
 16 to the notoriety of this case and the esteemed tribunal
 17 that is presiding over it.
 18 Professor Paulsson put it well this morning when
 19 he said that you cannot answer President Correa's rhetoric
 20 and his attack on the international legal system in kind.
 21 You can only answer in the voice of international law.
 22 And Mr. Bishop noted this afternoon that the rule
 23 of law is why we are all here. The rule of law is what
 24 this case is about.
 25 Sir Hersch Lauterpacht noted in his seminal work,

04:37 1 private litigation either within Ecuador or in foreign
 2 jurisdictions."
 3 Now, Ecuador knew full well that it was obligated
 4 under the Treaty, the UNCITRAL Rules, this Tribunal's
 5 directives and orders themselves to honor the Tribunal's
 6 order. Ecuador was simply refusing to do so, relying
 7 instead on a faulty and baseless argument that somehow its
 8 domestic laws could prevent it from fulfilling its
 9 international obligations.
 10 Two weeks later, the Tribunal issued its
 11 Fourth Interim Measures Award, February 9, stating neither
 12 disagreement with the Tribunal's Orders or Awards nor
 13 constraints under Ecuadorian law excuses Ecuador's failure
 14 through any branches of its Government, its organs, to
 15 fulfill its obligations under international law imposed by
 16 the Treaty, the UNCITRAL Rules, or the Tribunal's Orders or
 17 Awards.
 18 The Tribunal went on to declare and confirm that
 19 Ecuador remains legally obligated under international law
 20 to ensure that its commitments are not rendered nugatory by
 21 finalization, enforcement or execution of the Judgment.
 22 The Tribunal's admonition in its Fourth Interim Measures
 23 Award obviously fell on deaf ears. Ecuador holds its
 24 defiant ground to this very day. We're back to
 25 Paragraph 417 of its Rejoinder.

04:40 1 recognition in international law that the results of an
 2 illegal act are a legal nullity, they are legally
 3 non-existent. And in society in which enforcement of law
 4 is precarious, there is a natural tendency to regard
 5 successful breaches of law as a source of legal right.
 6 Sir Lauterpacht's remarks about a successful breach,
 7 although in a somewhat different context, but the same
 8 general point, should carry great weight with this Tribunal
 9 when you consider the remedies to award Chevron in this
 10 case. If the Tribunal determines that Ecuador has
 11 committed a denial of justice under international law, you
 12 should declare it. If you find that Ecuador has breached
 13 the Treaty, including the Settlement and Release Agreement,
 14 the effective means provision and the other provisions of
 15 the Treaty, you should declare them all.
 16 And finally, if you conclude that you have the
 17 jurisdictional authority to declare the consequences and
 18 the results of these determinations under international
 19 law, as I have demonstrated you do possess, then you should
 20 issue those declarations as well. If this Tribunal does
 21 not issue declarations that you determine international law
 22 allows you to render--and we would argue requires you to
 23 render under the principles of full reparation--then
 24 Ecuador will have successfully breached the law, and that
 25 successful breach may transcend Chevron and have ripple

<p>Sheet 61</p> <p style="text-align: right;">2735</p> <p>04:42 1 effects through the international legal system in itself. 2 And with that, Mr. President, if the Tribunal does 3 not have any questions for me, I'm going to pass the floor 4 to Professor Paulsson for the monetary set off theory. 5 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you very much. 6 Professor Paulsson. 7 MR. PAULSSON: Thank you, Mr. President. Your 8 Tribunal is going to develop an admirable reputation for 9 sitzfleisch. I hope I'm not pushing your patience too far. 10 What consequence did the PCIJ have in mind? Wipe 11 out all the consequences of the illegal act. The obvious 12 consequence here is a judgment which shouldn't exist. It 13 must be wiped out entirely. The malfeasance here was 14 pervasive, and there is no possibility of a partial 15 nullity. What head of damage might conceivably have been 16 the product of a fair and impartial weighing of all 17 pertinent data unaffected by the malfeasance and 18 manufactured evidence? What portion of the Judgment didn't 19 the Plaintiffs have a hand in? Maybe the date line. 20 To address the Tribunal's question, there is no 21 principled basis on which to say that there was no denial 22 of justice with respect to some portion of the Judgment, be 23 it \$500 or 500 million or any other number pulled out of a 24 hat. Nullification does not require consideration of 25 Chorzów's but-for test. Under no circumstance would the</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">2737</p> <p>04:45 1 conditions would have to be satisfied for there to be any 2 traction for this theory. The first condition is this: 3 The nature of the delict must allow the Tribunal 4 to engage in the but-for inquiry. That was not the 5 situation in Amco II, the case Ecuador claims that I have 6 disagreed with in my book when all I said is that I 7 regretted its lack of a fuller discussion of Chorzów. I 8 certainly have no quarrel with the outcome. The Amco II 9 Tribunal, presided by Rosalyn Higgins, the Tribunal was 10 told by Indonesia that Amco, a victim, held to have been a 11 victim of a denial of justice in a proceeding to revoke its 12 foreign investment license, would have lost its license, so 13 said Indonesia, even in a fair process. 14 You see, the license by its own terms was 15 conditional on Amco's having brought in a certain amount of 16 foreign capital during the first term of the license. So, 17 Indonesia submitted, to put the investor in the same 18 position it would have been in but for the breach is to 19 consider that although our revocation was improper, we can 20 still show, here and now, before you, the international 21 tribunal, that the license is after all properly revocable 22 for failure of that objective condition. No harm, no foul, 23 as they say in this country. 24 But the Tribunal was having none of this. It made 25 clear that its sole function was to determine if</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">2736</p> <p>04:44 1 tainted Judgment ever be deemed valid, and in any event--in 2 any event--you are a BIT Tribunal, and you have no 3 jurisdiction over the claim of the 47 Plaintiffs. 4 As for the Claimants' request for an injunction to 5 prevent enforcement of the fraudulent judgment, it's 6 clearly nonsensical to think of a set off against an 7 injunction. Either it's merited or not. 8 So, Ecuador's offset theory can relate only to the 9 Claimants' tertiary request for monetary damages. But 10 compensable injury arising from enforcement of the illicit 11 Judgment would never arise--would never arise--if Ecuador 12 had complied with the Claimants' prior request for 13 declaratory and injunctive relief. Ecuador's offset 14 argument is thus necessarily premised on its intent to 15 ignore any further instruction from this Tribunal not to 16 allow enforcement, just as it has ignored your interim 17 measures awards. This is unbounded cynicism. An effort by 18 Ecuador to reduce damages that it is now in a position to 19 prevent and that it has no intention of paying in the 20 future. This should not delay the Tribunal's issuance of a 21 Track 2 Award. If the argument is pursued, it can be 22 addressed in Track 3. 23 So, for now, you really do not need to get to the 24 substance of this theory for which Ecuador can cite no 25 precedent, but so you understand our position: Three</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">2738</p> <p>04:47 1 Indonesia's acts were detrimental to the victim. In my 2 book, I regretted that the Award did not provide fuller 3 explanation why it rejected Indonesia's argument. In fact, 4 Judge Higgins, somewhat to my relief, wrote me a gracious 5 note from The Hague about my book and my comments about 6 which I will say nothing except that it caused me to read 7 the Award and the underlying pleadings again as a matter of 8 sheer academic interest. That was a decade ago, and memory 9 fades. 10 Now, the point comes up in this case. And so we 11 look at Amco II again. We find two things. First of all, 12 the circumstances are sharply distinguishable. In Amco II, 13 just like the Commercial Cases presided by Professor 14 Böckstiegel, the State responsible for the denial of 15 justice was the very same party that was the victim's 16 opponent in the underlying dispute. Otherwise, the whole 17 setoff idea doesn't even get into the starting blocks, let 18 alone out of them. 19 Secondly, even in the Indonesian situation where, 20 of course, the very State which was responsible for the 21 denial of justice was the one which was responsible for 22 assessing compliance with the terms of the license, the 23 Tribunal gave useful indications of why it wasn't going to 24 get into a retrial of the merits of the revocation. The 25 arbitrators found, and now I quote, that the "whole</p>

04:48 1 approach to the issue of revocation of the license was
 2 tainted by bad faith" on the part of the Government
 3 officials. The arbitrators therefore refused to ask
 4 whether, if Indonesia had acted fairly, harm might have
 5 been attributed to Amco's own fault, failure of the
 6 objective condition of investing.

7 Judge Higgins wrote, Professor as she then was,
 8 "this is both speculative and not the issue before us."
 9 Amco II concerned monetary compensation and
 10 illustrates that where State conduct entails a measure of
 11 bad faith, the Chorzów counterfactual analysis is simply
 12 inappropriate. That conclusion follows a fortiori here,
 13 whether it is not simply bad faith but substantive fraud.

14 This situation doesn't come up often, but as it
 15 happens, the U.S. Supreme Court once faced this very same
 16 problem in a case called Hazel Atlas, and it did exactly
 17 what Judge Higgins and her colleagues did. You may find
 18 its short Judgment very instructive, as a matter of
 19 interest, at CLA-431. It has nothing to do with the
 20 specifics of U.S. law and everything to do with the eternal
 21 verities of the need to protect the fundamental interests
 22 of justice.

23 The second point is that, even where it might be
 24 appropriate and conceptually possible to excise the denial
 25 of justice, which as I noted is not the case here, the

04:51 1 arbitrators were in no position to rule on the forfeiture
 2 of the license without trying the case anew and
 3 substituting themselves for the very national legal system
 4 which had committed the positive denial of justice.

5 It is evident that these two first points
 6 foreclose Ecuador's attempt at an offset in this case.
 7 Fraud vitiates all, and the malfeasance here goes to the
 8 core of the Plaintiffs' case. The Cabrera Report, for
 9 example, was, according to the Expert Douglas Beltman,
 10 "probably the single most important technical document for
 11 the case." This was at the inception of the plot to create
 12 facts, as Donziger put it. Beltman was one of the Experts
 13 who later recanted. Probably the single most important
 14 technical document for the case.

15 If the Cabrera Report wasn't critical to their
 16 case, Plaintiffs' representatives would not have spent the
 17 money and borne the risk of this considerable and risky
 18 machination. Recall the phrase "all of us might go to
 19 jail". It is surely folly in these circumstances to speak
 20 of salvaging a judgment unscathed by fraud. It cannot be
 21 cleansed.

22 Ecuador understands that the Lago Agrio Record is
 23 past saving. Why else has it resorted to gathering new
 24 samples secretly outside of any proper process? Your
 25 Tribunal has no basis at all on which it could speculate,

04:50 1 existing record before the international tribunal must be
 2 clean and contain everything needed to assess the proper
 3 outcome. That was the case for Professor Böckstiegel and
 4 his co-Arbitrators in the Commercial Cases arbitration. As
 5 you're aware, the Ecuadorian courts there had failed to
 6 decide cases in which the Claimants were the Plaintiffs in
 7 a remotely timely fashion. There was nothing to be
 8 declared null. It therefore fell to the Tribunal, which
 9 was applying the treaty standard of effective means, to
 10 determine the value of the Claimants' unadjudicated claims
 11 in the first instance.

12 As I observed on Page 227 of my book, the damages
 13 to be awarded a Claimant who was prevented by a denial of
 14 justice from having his grievance heard properly, should,
 15 of course, not uncritically be deemed equal to be whatever
 16 he had seen fit to ask initially. The task of Professor
 17 Böckstiegel and his colleagues was relatively
 18 straightforward, given the existence of a complete and
 19 uncorrupted record in each of the underlying cases, which
 20 allowed them to make their own assessment of the value of
 21 the rights of which the Claimant had been deprived. The
 22 only way to do it.

23 In Amco II, in contrast, where, as Judge Higgins
 24 wrote, the circumstances surrounding the Administrative
 25 Decision tainted the proceedings irrevocably. The

04:53 1 even if you were minded to do so, on how an Ecuadorian
 2 Court might have decided if it were not politicized, if it
 3 were not corrupt, and if the evidence were untainted.

4 Point 3, finally, is one to which I have already
 5 alluded. It follows the observation that in Amco II and in
 6 the Commercial Cases arbitration, the Parties were
 7 identical in both the underlying domestic proceeding and
 8 the international arbitration. Here, to reduce Ecuador's
 9 liability, you would have to speculate about the intention
 10 of third parties with respect to whom you have no
 11 jurisdiction, namely the Lago Agrio Plaintiffs, faced with
 12 the collapse of their fraudulent evidence. Would they
 13 really try again and go to the effort of mounting a serious
 14 claim from scratch with honest Experts who are not
 15 instructed to ignore critical factors such as the
 16 proportion of harm caused by Petroecuador's ongoing
 17 operations alone during a quarter of a century?

18 Fatally compounding these difficulties is the fact
 19 that Ecuador is precluded by the settlement and releases
 20 from litigating against the Claimants over environmental
 21 conditions in the Oriente. If, as Mr. Coriell has shown,
 22 the Lago Agrio action is diffuse, the Releases are an
 23 obvious bar to any offset. But even assuming counter to
 24 fact that there are individual claims not covered by the
 25 1995 Agreement, Ecuador has already conceded in its Track 2

04:54 1 Counter-Memorial Paragraph 516 that it cannot act as the
 2 Plaintiffs' surrogate.
 3 In sum, Amco II teaches that there is no second
 4 chance in these circumstances, given Ecuador's complicity
 5 in the fraud permeating this case, it is in no position to
 6 request a do-over, which would have the unpalatable effect
 7 of rendering denials of justice virtually costless. Have a
 8 go. For their part, the Lago Agrio Plaintiffs have
 9 knowingly ratified the illicit actions of their counsel, as
 10 the RICO Court found, Exhibit C-2135 at Pages 338-339, and
 11 they are actively seeking to profit from the enforcement of
 12 the fraudulent judgment abroad. Both had the opportunity
 13 to try this case in accordance with the rule of law. Their
 14 choices cannot be undone.
 15 And so, Members of the Tribunal, I come to my
 16 final topic before Mr. Pate makes his concluding
 17 observations.
 18 I wish to reflect on Ecuador's attempt to put
 19 forward before you two kinds of equitable considerations to
 20 excuse its conduct. One, you heard it in the openings.
 21 One had to do with what scoundrels oil companies are, ready
 22 to despoil a pristine native human habitat and then to deny
 23 that crude oil could possibly be toxic. The other had to
 24 do with the "real victims," the indigenous populations
 25 mentioned several times in Ecuador's oral opening arguments

04:58 1 want any oil, we want to leave our indigenous population in
 2 their sylvan idyll.
 3 B, we need money for development, and we need it
 4 fast. We want maximal production at the lowest cost,
 5 whatever the consequences.
 6 C, we do need money, but not at the cost of
 7 disturbing the indigenous population. In their interest,
 8 we require that operators spend whatever is necessary to
 9 restore their sites to lush glades and crystalline streams,
 10 even if that reduces our dividends, royalties and taxes.
 11 It was the Government's choice; its actions, its
 12 responsibility.
 13 Yet, Mr. Correa would now deny this. He portrays
 14 Ecuador as a helpless victim of oil companies who have
 15 stolen vast riches from his country. Texaco has not been
 16 his only scapegoat, as you will have seen, if you read the
 17 findings of fact of ICSID tribunals which have dealt with
 18 the cases of Perenco, Occidental, Burlington. Mr. Correa's
 19 message is quoted in Paragraph 38 of the Decision on
 20 Liability in the Burlington Case, where he condemned, his
 21 words, "the opprobrious past" and decried oil companies
 22 that give us a little piece and the rest they take away.
 23 Now, Mr. Correa may describe himself as a
 24 revolutionary, as he explicitly did in that very speech,
 25 but he got a Ph.D. in economics from the University of

04:56 1 with no little measure of sententiousness.
 2 If Ecuador seriously wants to talk the talk of
 3 equity in this denial-of-justice case, then by all means,
 4 for a few moments let's talk of equity, but let us please
 5 make it hard talk. We hear of a native population whose
 6 life of traditional subsistence in harmonious symbiosis
 7 with nature is sacrificed to the goal of economic
 8 development, without so much as a by your leave,
 9 irreversibly transforming their habitat and their way of
 10 life, and giving back almost nothing in return. This
 11 dislocation is undoubtedly real, and so is the deprivation.
 12 It's a sad story. So who made the decisions that led to
 13 these results? Who caused this outcome? Who is
 14 accountable?
 15 Ecuador, half a century ago, was an impoverished
 16 country with a growing population. It found great natural
 17 resources in the Oriente. The Government recognized what
 18 it had and made deliberate choices. You can take with a
 19 very large grain of salt any talk about oil companies
 20 taking advantage of ignorant officials. The Ecuadorian
 21 Governments knew how to negotiate, and they have known how
 22 to negotiate since the beginning. I will get back to that.
 23 Consider the infinite range of alternative
 24 policies that Ecuador could have pursued. I'll just give
 25 you two extremes and something in the middle. We don't

04:59 1 Illinois in 2001. He knew very well that what he was
 2 saying was untrue. But, of course, he was speaking to the
 3 masses, and the masses, not only in Ecuador, are often
 4 ill-informed and can easily rush to poor judgment if they
 5 are told by the highest official of the land that
 6 foreigners have been running away with national treasures.
 7 But we can all do the math, so let us check this assertion
 8 of foreigners "giving us a little piece."
 9 In the Oxy Case, for example, it was estimated
 10 that after taxes and costs Occidental received 30 percent
 11 of total net profits, that was in Paragraph 117 of that
 12 Decision and apparently not contradicted by Ecuador,
 13 RLA-587. From its share, Ecuador, of course, did not have
 14 any taxes to deduct. Nor did it have any costs.
 15 So, what about TexPet? Luis Alberto Aráuz, a very
 16 senior Ecuadorian professor of Mining and Petroleum Law who
 17 has represented Ecuador in negotiations with oil companies,
 18 wrote a book famous in Ecuador which bears the title
 19 "Ecuadorian Petroleum Law," derecho petrolero ecuatoriano,
 20 616 pages long. Professor Aráuz went to New York in the
 21 1970s to participate as a member of the Ecuadorian
 22 delegation in the drafting of the U.N. Resolution of the
 23 new world economic order. I think I need say nothing more
 24 about his credentials as someone who does not lavish praise
 25 on multi-national private corporations. In his book,

05:01 1 Professor Aráuz calculated that what the Ecuadorian
 2 Government received from the activities of TexPet in the
 3 20-year period from 1972 to 1992 in the Oriente. His
 4 bottom number, \$23.5 billion.
 5 In contrast, the corporate records available to
 6 Chevron show that the cumulative income TexPet received
 7 over those years was less than half a billion, less than
 8 \$500 million, in fact, \$480 million as set forth in the
 9 Report of Brent Kaczmarek, Page 34.
 10 Mr. Correa's depiction of the opprobrious past was
 11 demagoguery pure and simple. The fact is that during the
 12 five-year period in the 1970s, the Ecuadorian Government
 13 pushed Texaco's tax rate from 44 percent to 87 percent. In
 14 an interview, Professor Aráuz is quoted as saying, and I
 15 quote him: "We dictated terms to Texaco, and the company
 16 accepted." R-1202.
 17 We couldn't be further away from the cartoonish
 18 depiction of foreign investors as thieves who steal the
 19 country's riches and leave just a little piece, as Correa
 20 says.
 21 In addition to negotiating lucrative concessions
 22 for itself, Ecuador, beginning in 1963, also pursued a
 23 policy of colonizing the region, which was referred to as
 24 "empty territory." Eventually, tens of thousands of poor
 25 people from the highlands were offered free property if

05:02 1 they would plant crops and raise cattle. No one seems to
 2 dispute the simple fact that Government-sponsored
 3 agricultural settlement resulted in vastly more
 4 deforestation than did oil development.
 5 The indigenous population of Ecuador, less than
 6 10 percent of the whole, looks different, speaks a
 7 different idiom, struggles to maintain vestiges of their
 8 original cultural. In the Oriente, their land has been
 9 allocated to waves of settlers from the western part of the
 10 country. And their subsoil, which they were told was not
 11 theirs, but rather the property of the State, yielded and
 12 continues to yield an abundance of hydrocarbons which fill
 13 the coffers of the Government in Quito, across the Andes.
 14 In a regulated private oil industry, the Government
 15 assesses compliance with the standards set for those who
 16 produce and sell. But when the Government takes over in
 17 the form of entities with names like Petroecuador, it
 18 becomes its own judge, and the appetite for cash and for
 19 its apportionment in accordance with political decisions in
 20 which the indigenous populations often have very little to
 21 say, seem to make them far worse polluters by far than any
 22 foreign enterprise subject to proper regulation.
 23 Today, in our new world, seven of the world's ten
 24 largest oil companies are self-regulated and self-audited.
 25 No private shareholders. They're not exposed to any

05:04 1 serious scrutiny.
 2 In 1990, Texaco did not leave Ecuador because it
 3 wanted to, but because Petroecuador wanted to take over so
 4 the State would have everything for itself. At that time,
 5 there were significant environmental impacts from the
 6 Consortium. That's the inevitable reality at the end of
 7 any major oil operations, as your Tribunal recognized in
 8 your jurisdictional award.
 9 After an open and transparent processes, as you
 10 were reminded again today by Ms. Renfro, the Ecuadorian
 11 regulators established specified remedial standards for the
 12 portion of sites assigned to TexPet. This resulted in the
 13 Settlement and Release Agreement. You will remember that
 14 the Director of Ecuador's Environmental Ministry told
 15 Ecuador's Congress three years after the Lago Agrio
 16 Litigation was filed, that, and I quote, "Texaco completed
 17 the remediation of the pits that were their responsibility"
 18 while Petroecuador had done, I quote, "absolutely nothing."
 19 So, what did the Government do for the indigenous
 20 population? Well, in 1996, while TexPet was in the process
 21 of performing the agreed upon remediation, the Government
 22 secretly concluded the "Waiver of Rights" with the
 23 Plaintiffs' counsel, who agreed to surrender forever any
 24 claims against Ecuador or Petroecuador. The Plaintiff's
 25 lead lawyer at the time, Cristobal Bonifaz, later testified

05:05 1 under oath, that's C-1220, that he signed the Agreement
 2 because they knew that a suit against the Government would
 3 be futile and the Government would never pay environmental
 4 claims but Texaco would. He explained that the Plaintiffs'
 5 counsel viewed the Agreement--the Plaintiff's counsel
 6 viewed the Agreement with the Government as a quid pro quo.
 7 I think we all know what the quid was: Use your State
 8 powers to put the squeeze on Chevron.
 9 The waiver of rights was not only a bad faith
 10 breach of Ecuador's obligations under the Settlement and
 11 Release Agreement, it was an abdication of Ecuador's duties
 12 to the indigenous population of the Oriente. It cannot be
 13 disputed that every bit of contamination that has occurred
 14 over the past 25 years in the zone you have been hearing
 15 about is that of Petroecuador and Petroecuador alone. The
 16 hard fact is that Texaco remediated its share as promised
 17 on time in a proper manner and certified as such by the
 18 appropriate public official. Ecuador did not.
 19 Petroecuador's belated remediation has been certified, and
 20 the cost of that is 1 percent of that assessed against the
 21 long-departed Texaco and now against Chevron by Zambrano.
 22 So, Ecuador's position before you is that the
 23 foreigners, who had earned less than 10 percent of the
 24 revenues during the long ago time when the Consortium was
 25 operating and who have, of course, earned nothing at all

<p>Sheet 65</p> <p style="text-align: right;">2751</p> <p>05:07 1 since then should pay a multiple of more than 90 times the 2 remediation expenses of Petroecuador which had 90 percent 3 of the revenues while TexPet was around, and 100 percent of 4 the revenues ever since, and during which time Petroecuador 5 has been exclusively responsible for all pollution. 6 Petroecuador alone was responsible for spilling no 7 less than 125,000 barrels of oil through 2009, according to 8 the Ecuadorian Ministry of the Environment. Since 2009, 9 the flow of information about Petroecuador's spills has 10 dried up. What a surprise. 11 The native population of the Oriente may well have 12 legitimate grievances against their Government in Quito, 13 and attorneys purporting to act on their behalf, but these 14 are complex issues that are not matters for Chevron or the 15 Tribunal. What is at issue here is the Lago Agrio 16 Judgment, in which there are 47 named Plaintiffs. 17 Mr. Bloom in the opening lamented that they have 18 been seeking to have their day in Court for 22 years. But 19 what are their claims and what are their rights? 20 If, on the one hand, they are acting as 21 representatives of the environment generally, their claim 22 is properly directed to Petroecuador. As you held in your 23 Track 1A Award, all diffuse environmental claims against 24 TexPet and Chevron arising from the Consortium have been 25 released. This is true irrespective of what specific code</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">2753</p> <p>05:10 1 currently seeking to enforce the fraudulent judgment, as 2 you know, in Argentina, Brazil and Canada. 3 Gentlemen, we can all unhesitatingly accept that 4 Chevron is not the only victim here, a supposedly 5 revolutionary Government has been in power in Ecuador for 6 the better part of a decade, yet instead of acting to 7 improve the lives and conditions of the entire indigenous 8 community, it has aided the fraud done in the name of only 9 47. I'm afraid it's business as usual. But let us not 10 have any more logic that insults the intelligence, 11 syllogisms like this: One, here is an ugly photograph of 12 unknown origin and unknown date said to be from somewhere 13 in the Oriente; two, TexPet was in the Oriente a quarter of 14 a century ago; three, Chevron is in the oil business and is 15 a big company; so, four, Chevron must pay. Let us not hear 16 any more fatuous talk of equity from this Respondent. 17 Gentlemen, I thank you for your patience, and I 18 now invite you to listen to Mr. Pate for his concluding 19 remarks. 20 PRESIDENT VEEDER: One moment. 21 We are sorry to hold you up, but we will have a 22 ten-minute break and then we will hear Mr. Pate. 23 (Brief recess.) 24 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Mr. Pate. 25 MR. PATE: Thank you, Mr. President, Members of</p>
<p style="text-align: right;">2752</p> <p>05:09 1 provision they invoke in support of their diffuse claim, as 2 Mr. Coriell showed again today. 3 As a side note, if these 47 are barred from suing 4 Petroecuador in light of the waiver of rights given by 5 their counsel, there are any number of residents in the 6 Oriente who remain free to take up the mantle. 7 If, on the other hand, the 47 are suing for 8 individual harms, they are necessarily acting only on 9 behalf of themselves. Note well that Ecuador in its 10 opening conceded that the 47 are not suing for individual 11 harms, which confirms the consistent findings in all three 12 Lago Agrio Decisions and the repeated admissions of 13 Plaintiffs' counsel. 14 There, of course, might be others in the Oriente 15 besides the 47 who have individual claims, but, if so, one 16 would have expected them to have already brought them, 17 given that a quarter of a century has passed since TexPet 18 left Ecuador. 19 At any rate, any individual rights held by such 20 non-parties would be unaffected by nullification of this 21 Judgment. The key point is that the 47 Plaintiffs can have 22 no legitimate claim to enforce a judgment issued in 23 violation of customary international law. Yet, as recently 24 as January 2013, they have ratified the authority of 25 Fajardo and Donziger to act on their behalf and they are</p>	<p style="text-align: right;">2754</p> <p>05:22 1 the Tribunal. 2 The Tribunal has now seen and heard the evidence. 3 You've heard argument about the legal significance of that 4 evidence. I'd like to now give you Chevron's perspective 5 as a company. I'd like to respond as best I can to the 6 Tribunal's questions about our RICO statute in the United 7 States, give you an update about the enforcement and some 8 of the other litigations that are part of this situation, 9 and then finally address the unique and important role of 10 this Tribunal. 11 Let me begin with the root of this matter: The 12 environmental facts on the ground in Ecuador. As it turned 13 out, the Tribunal's decision to spend time on the 14 environmental merits of this matter has proved both wise 15 and important. The Tribunal now understands the nature of 16 the RAP. It understands how responsibility was divided as 17 between TexPet and Petroecuador, how the TexPet remediation 18 work was done, the confirmation of the effectiveness of 19 that work by officials of Ecuador at that time and then 20 repeatedly thereafter. And I think understands the vast 21 gulf between the fraudulent and discriminatory Lago Agrio 22 Judgment and actual regulatory standards and remediation 23 costs. All of this is part of why Chevron feels so 24 strongly about the injustice of what Ecuador and its 25 private co-conspirators are doing.</p>

05:24 1 Now, the RAP was the substantive basis of the
 2 Contract, that issue in Track 1 of this case. As you have
 3 already ruled in Track 1A, that Contract released all
 4 collective or diffuse environmental claims. The Tribunal
 5 rendered an interim decision on Track 1B, that it could not
 6 decide whether a breach had occurred until hearing the
 7 evidence with regard to the actual conduct of the Lago
 8 Agrio Litigation. And it's now just done that during this
 9 Track 2, and so the Tribunal knows that every statement of
 10 the Plaintiffs themselves and every statement of every
 11 level of the Ecuadorian Court system confirms that
 12 collective or diffuse claims were the sole basis of the
 13 sweeping liability that was imposed on Chevron. But,
 14 having heard the environmental evidence, the Tribunal can
 15 also now apply its common sense to the Contract issue.
 16 What is it that Ecuador asks the Tribunal to
 17 believe Ecuador and TexPet agreed to? TexPet, you are
 18 asked to believe, carefully negotiated the apportionment of
 19 remedial assignments between TexPet and Ecuador in 52
 20 interim Actas. It then performed the tasks that it was
 21 assigned through international Contractors. TexPet then
 22 participated in the extensive verification process required
 23 to complete and obtain the elaborate signature blocks on 19
 24 Approval Actas, and then on a Final Acta.
 25 But then, according to Ecuador, TexPet was

05:27 1 ghostwriting of the Judgment using their own unfiled
 2 materials; fourth, the absurd and discriminatory fraudulent
 3 judgment itself imposing enormous liability by ignoring the
 4 environmental standards applicable to Petroecuador and
 5 other companies, and then manufacturing environmental costs
 6 for remediation exponentially greater than those used
 7 anywhere else in the world.
 8 Now, the fifth denial of justice is Ecuador's
 9 response to the exposure of the first four. This goes
 10 directly to the question of when international liability
 11 will attach for misconduct that began in a country's
 12 courts. In some cases that question is interesting. In
 13 some cases it is even a difficult question. Not so here
 14 where it has been resoundingly answered in three places:
 15 First, within Ecuador's own system; second, before this
 16 Tribunal; and, third, outside the Tribunal.
 17 As to Ecuador's own system, ask yourself this:
 18 Have you seen any evidence that any organ of Ecuador's
 19 Government has shown any good faith interest in
 20 investigating, much less remedying, the allegations of
 21 misconduct here? No. Instead, we have attacks on Chevron
 22 for exposing the corruption, and we have ever-shifting
 23 fabrications about how the fraud might be corrected if
 24 Chevron could just find the right procedural path. Of
 25 course, no sooner does Ecuador recommend a path then it

05:25 1 supposed to wake up the next morning and begin remediating
 2 everything else, including every site that was assigned to
 3 Ecuador, even those that were designated for no action
 4 because Petroecuador was at that time operating them.
 5 Really? This cannot be right.
 6 Now, you've also seen, heard, and read about the
 7 fraud evidence, with the exception of Judge Zambrano, whom
 8 Ecuador elected not to bring to the Tribunal after his
 9 appearance in New York made the truth so vivid to everyone
 10 who saw him there. I will not revisit the evidence, not
 11 even the Honey & Honey restaurant. I will observe that
 12 this must be the most thorough documentary, video, and
 13 testimonial proof of fraud ever put before an arbitral
 14 tribunal. For Ecuador to suggest that Chevron should have
 15 had more evidence when Ecuador's courts were part of a sham
 16 litigation conducted by Pablo Fajardo in order to prevent
 17 discovery of the further evidence that was located in
 18 Ecuador is disingenuous at best.
 19 Although you will review the scheme as a whole,
 20 the evidence before the Tribunal demonstrates at least five
 21 separate and independent denials of justice: First, the
 22 Cabrera fraud, which the private and Government
 23 conspirators never quite managed to cleanse.
 24 Second, the paid Guerra order ghostwriting on
 25 behalf of the Plaintiffs; third, the Plaintiffs'

05:29 1 declares that path invalid. No reasonable person believes
 2 that Chevron can get a fair hearing on this case in
 3 President Correa's Ecuador.
 4 Now, before this Tribunal, Ecuador's
 5 responsibility is established by the very positions it has
 6 taken before you. It has not sought to separate itself
 7 from the corruption in its courts, but instead has
 8 repeatedly denied the undeniable. It claims to you that
 9 the \$9 billion Judgment was not ghostwritten. It denies to
 10 you that Guerra wrote the Orders in the Lago Agrio Case
 11 which appear on his computer. It denies to you the
 12 discussions of a \$500,000 bribe scheme which even Donziger
 13 admits. It denies that it has anything to do with the
 14 private litigation. The cynicism of these factual
 15 presentations to this Tribunal is breathtaking.
 16 Now, outside the Tribunal, and in this case, I
 17 mean literally right outside the Tribunal, right outside
 18 the World Bank building, where we have seen a daily circus
 19 of Ecuador-sponsored, and, in fact, Ecuador-logo'd
 20 slanderous communications all in daily violation of this
 21 Tribunal's orders, we have Ecuador's promotion of the
 22 fraudulent judgment.
 23 I would ask you to compare some of the statements
 24 in the pamphlets being passed out by Ecuador to what you
 25 have heard on the record in this Tribunal. The only

05:30 1 conclusion you'll be able to draw is that the presentations
 2 are knowing falsehoods, and I would ask you to reflect on
 3 how Ecuador repays a company that produced \$23 billion for
 4 Ecuador, leaving aside the over \$50 billion produced in the
 5 Concession since, during a time that Texaco made
 6 \$500 million in profit, profit that has long since been
 7 swamped by the damage Ecuador has inflicted in this case.
 8 Now, beyond this, Ecuador has publicly declared
 9 Chevron witnesses in this Tribunal and its lawyers to be
 10 traitors and sought to prosecute them. They justly fear
 11 for their safety and for that of their families. The Head
 12 of State himself continuously reviles Chevron and makes
 13 international diplomatic visits specifically to promote the
 14 fraudulent judgment, all in willful gratuitous violation of
 15 the Tribunal's Awards, through devices such as its
 16 insulting pamphlets and its malicious recusal motion,
 17 Ecuador hopes that the Tribunal will be frightened from its
 18 duty or at least that the Tribunal will delay carrying out
 19 its duty. To be sure, investor-State arbitration is under
 20 attack in some political quarters, and Ecuador is one of
 21 the leading attackers, but policy issues about the proper
 22 scope of investor-State arbitration have nothing to do with
 23 defending and promoting a fraud like this one, unless the
 24 point is that a sovereign should not be subject to any
 25 international standard at all.

05:33 1 Several courts issued opinions, and the most significant
 2 one came under the rubric of the crime-fraud exception to
 3 attorney-client privilege in the United States. One of the
 4 grounds on which attorney-client privilege can be breached
 5 in discovery orders is if it is found that that privilege
 6 is being asserted in furtherance of a fraud, and a few
 7 examples I will leave with you here. The District Court
 8 for the Western District of North Carolina, reviewing the
 9 evidence said, "While this Court is unfamiliar with the
 10 practices of the Ecuadorian judicial system, the Court must
 11 believe that the concept of fraud is universal, and that
 12 what has blatantly occurred in this matter would, in fact,
 13 be considered fraud by any court. If such conduct does not
 14 amount to fraud in a particular country, then that country
 15 has larger problems than an oil spill."
 16 In New Mexico, the Court observed that the crude
 17 outtakes had sent shock waves through the nation's legal
 18 communities.
 19 The District Court for the Southern District of
 20 California found, it said, ample evidence of the Cabrera
 21 scheme. That quote I suppose is irrelevant at this point
 22 since that's largely conceded by everyone.
 23 More relevant to some of the evidence we spent a
 24 lot of time on, the District Court for the District of
 25 Maryland said, "Chevron has shown to anyone with common

05:32 1 Now, the Tribunal has asked about the RICO case
 2 and about the RICO statute. Perhaps the Tribunal is
 3 interested in how the Tribunal's work fits into the many
 4 other cases involved in this litigation. I'd like to try
 5 to pause and give you a brief update before I conclude to
 6 answer the questions you have on those matters.
 7 I have two slides which I believe are going to be
 8 handed up to you to try to set some context about the
 9 different categories of litigation that have taken place.
 10 We have the so-called 1782 actions in the United States,
 11 and I'll tell you how some of the same evidence that you've
 12 seen here came to be involved in those and what the issue
 13 was and the conclusions were.
 14 We'll talk about the RICO case currently on appeal
 15 to the Second Circuit. I'll give an update on the Canada,
 16 Argentina, and Brazil enforcement matters, and then
 17 conclude with brief mention of a currently pending
 18 litigation in the courts of Gibraltar.
 19 Now, on the slide that I put up and that I believe
 20 you have, these constitute findings by the so-called "1782
 21 courts" in the United States, 28 USC Section 1782 is a
 22 statute in the United States which allows discovery to be
 23 taken in aid of a foreign proceeding. During some stages,
 24 that proceeding was litigation in Ecuador, during some
 25 stages, litigation for discovery in aid of this proceeding.

05:35 1 sense that the insertion of the Fusión Memo text in the
 2 Ecuadorian Judgment is a blatant cut-and-paste exercise."
 3 And as to the cleansing effort with respect to the
 4 Cabrera fraud, the District Court for the District of
 5 Columbia found that the Weinberg Group's work--that was the
 6 group that had been hired to perform the cleansing--was
 7 part of a fraud upon the Ecuadorian Court.
 8 So, those 1782 cases led up to the RICO action.
 9 You will recall that initially RICO was not the primary
 10 focus of that Southern District of New York Action. In
 11 count nine of that case, using the Declaratory Judgments
 12 Act, Chevron sought protection by preemptive application of
 13 the New York Judgment Enforcement Statute to Prevent
 14 Enforcement. One of the reasons for that was that the
 15 reservation of rights by Chevron under the New York
 16 Convention to defend against any Ecuadorian Judgment was
 17 common ground among everyone in earlier stages of this
 18 litigation.
 19 The Southern District of New York granted an
 20 injunction. Under that count nine you will recall the
 21 Second Circuit vacated it, finding that the Declaratory
 22 Judgment Act was not available for that use of the New York
 23 Judgment enforcement statute, and also observed that it had
 24 difficulty with the comity effects of an injunction that
 25 prevented enforcement in numerous foreign countries. The

05:36 1 focus of that case then shifted to the American RICO
 2 statute.
 3 You observed in your questions that that is an
 4 unusual statute. It is a statute that creates the ability
 5 of private litigants to pursue civil litigation but
 6 requires as a showing of what are called predicate acts,
 7 violation of a number of listed criminal statutes: If that
 8 predicate finding and certain other findings are made, it
 9 allows a private party to seek damages relief or, as
 10 Chevron sought to pursue, injunctive relief. In this case,
 11 the Judge, Judge Kaplan, acted as the finder of fact
 12 because the only relief Chevron sought was injunctive. He
 13 issued, as you know, and I won't belabor this, lengthy
 14 findings. The Parties to that case were Donziger and his
 15 associates, were two of the 47 LAPs. Only two of the 47
 16 decided to appear. The others defaulted. Pablo Fajardo,
 17 Luis Yánza, the Amazon Defense Front, Selva Viva were also
 18 defaulting Defendants. Originally Stratus Consulting,
 19 Mr. Beltman, Ms. Maest, were defendants, they ultimately
 20 settled the case, and then disavowed some of what they had
 21 done. The Court as you know made findings, and the
 22 applicable standard under that statute called for findings
 23 under a standard of clear and convincing evidence. It
 24 found by clear and convincing evidence that the evidence
 25 had demonstrated extortion, wire fraud, money-laundering,

05:38 1 obstruction of justice, witness tampering, violations of
 2 the Travel Act and the Foreign Corrupt Practices Act.
 3 As an additional part of that case, Judge Kaplan
 4 examined an independent cause of action, a common-law cause
 5 of action for corruption of a judgment. That came up both
 6 as an independent action and because evaluation of the
 7 judgment was necessary to evaluate the res judicata or
 8 collateral estoppel defense that the Defendants in the RICO
 9 case, the Lago Agrio Plaintiffs, and Mr. Donziger had
 10 asserted. And as you know, he found that the Lago Agrio
 11 Judgment was obtained by corrupt means, and that for that
 12 and other reasons it was not entitled to collateral
 13 estoppel or other effect. And, indeed, was not a judgment
 14 that was worthy of enforcement.
 15 That opinion, that judgment by Judge Kaplan is on
 16 appeal to the Second Circuit. As you know, the day before
 17 this proceeding commenced argument was heard. The
 18 principal issue in that case is whether a private party may
 19 obtain injunctive relief under the RICO statute or whether
 20 that is only available to the U.S. Government. That is an
 21 issue that's been open in American law for some time.
 22 One thing I would note, though, is that in the
 23 briefing of that entire case before the Second Circuit, no
 24 alternative narrative or any significant challenge to the
 25 factual findings of Judge Kaplan was made.

05:40 1 So, let me pause there and see if there are other
 2 questions about RICO.
 3 PRESIDENT VEEDER: No, thank you.
 4 Please continue.
 5 MR. PATE: Enforcement actions, the same three
 6 that I've told you about before, continue in Canada, which
 7 was the first filed enforcement action. You will recall
 8 the history was that initially the trial court, finding
 9 that there was no basis to disregard the corporate
 10 separateness between Chevron Canada, which is present in
 11 Canada but has no connection whatsoever to the Ecuadorian
 12 litigation, and Chevron Corporation, which is the Judgment
 13 debtor in the Ecuadorian litigation but has no operations
 14 or presence in Canada. The Court found that lacking any
 15 evidence that the standards under Canadian law for
 16 disregarding that corporate separateness could be found,
 17 the action should be stayed. The trial court had rejected
 18 Chevron's further contention that a jurisdictional showing
 19 of presence on behalf of the Judgment debtor was required
 20 at the outset.
 21 And on appeal, the intermediate Court in Canada
 22 reversed the stay finding that the trial court had made.
 23 Argument has now been had in the Supreme Court of Canada.
 24 The Court heard argument on December 11th on the
 25 jurisdictional issue, the issue whether on the pleadings,

05:41 1 if you will, some basis of jurisdiction over Chevron Corp
 2 would be required. We expect a decision in that case could
 3 come at any time. It's difficult to say, if the Supreme
 4 Court finds that a jurisdictional finding was necessary, it
 5 should end the case. If the Court does not, the next stage
 6 may include a factual Hearing on the corporate separateness
 7 issues as the next step. So, that's Canada.
 8 In Brazil and Argentina, I don't have anything
 9 quite as specific as that to report. The case in Argentina
 10 has been--excuse me, in Brazil has been moving forward to
 11 the extent that the Reporting Judge has ordered that the
 12 case file be made available to the Public Prosecutor for an
 13 opinion to be rendered as is the practice in that system.
 14 That case has been assigned to NPF prosecutor Nicolo
 15 Aldino. That was done in February, the time for the NPF
 16 opinion to have issued has run, but those time periods are
 17 frequently extended. I can't give you any more prediction
 18 about when the case will move to the next stage, but I
 19 guess I would say that it is poised, perhaps, to move to
 20 further developments in the near future, but there is no
 21 ability to predict when it might do so.
 22 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Can I interrupt you? You
 23 referred to the Public Prosecutor.
 24 MR. PATE: Yes.
 25 PRESIDENT VEEDER: This would be a civil

05:43 1 enforcement?
 2 MR. PATE: It is and I'm not an expert in
 3 Brazilian law, but the public prosecutor, the Ministerial
 4 Publica is under that system, often or in certain types of
 5 proceedings called upon to give opinions about what its
 6 view is of the legal issues in the case.
 7 PRESIDENT VEEDER: I think I'm told it's not--it
 8 would not usually be a criminal proceeding.
 9 MR. PATE: No, it's not a criminal proceeding, but
 10 actually there may be any number of people who can correct
 11 me about the fine points of Brazilian procedure, but it is
 12 a Government attorney's office that would conduct the
 13 review. The case is not criminal. It is a civil exequatur
 14 Judgment recognition case.
 15 Argentina, a number of defenses have been filed, a
 16 number of briefs, some subsidiary motions have been argued,
 17 but I think without detailing that, the shortest way to put
 18 it is that that case remains pending but I don't have any
 19 prediction of what the next major steps would be.
 20 So, any questions on the three pending enforcement
 21 cases? Of course, the constant threats of more enforcement
 22 filings continue, but I have no information about that.
 23 PRESIDENT VEEDER: No, thank you very much. We
 24 have no questions.
 25 MR. PATE: All right, finally then, I will mention

05:46 1 as the American system is often criticized by the
 2 Plaintiffs as being somehow biased or untrustworthy as this
 3 Tribunal is. This is a ruling from Gibraltar on that
 4 topic, and a few of the comments made in denying that
 5 Motion to Strike out include that "if the Appeal Court in
 6 Ecuador had before it anything like the evidence which has
 7 been put before me, it is, indeed, surprising on the face
 8 of it that at least a rehearing was not ordered."
 9 He went on actually to call into question and was
 10 right to do so, whether the Ecuadorian appellate system had
 11 actually done anything to address or to issue de novo
 12 findings about or otherwise to treat with the fraud. He
 13 said he was not convinced that it did. In fact, quoting
 14 Justice Butler, it said specifically that it stayed out of
 15 the accusations of fraud. But at the end of the day and in
 16 this final bullet that I give you on this slide, Justice
 17 Butler said, "it would be difficult to have confidence in
 18 an Appeal Court which made the findings which it did and
 19 upheld the First Instance Decision if the Claimants'
 20 allegations are correct." I think Justice Butler has a
 21 gift for understatement.
 22 Are there any further questions about the context
 23 of the other litigations? If not, I will conclude.
 24 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Just one question. The
 25 reference to Annex P on your PowerPoint slide.

05:44 1 Gibraltar and put up the second slide I have. In
 2 Gibraltar, Chevron has had a litigation against certain of
 3 the funders of the litigation scheme. Mr. De Leon, an
 4 early funder, a later funder Woodsford Group, which
 5 recently withdrew claims against some of the entities that
 6 were set up to administer the funding waterfall that you
 7 heard about earlier, Amazonia, Torvia are the names of some
 8 of the companies that have been set up to distribute any
 9 proceeds that this scheme might generate.
 10 There was a hearing on a Motion to Strike out as
 11 it's called in Gibraltar, and it's probably important for
 12 the Tribunal to know that while here it has been depicted
 13 that Chevron will, of course, have plenty of opportunities
 14 to defend against any enforcement, so this Tribunal need
 15 not be much concerned about doing anything. In the
 16 enforcement actions and other actions, it has typically
 17 been the position of the Lago Agrio Plaintiffs, Defendants
 18 in Gibraltar, that the appellate process in Ecuador has
 19 fully considered and ruled upon all of Chevron's fraud
 20 allegations so that those rulings ought to be considered
 21 issue preclusive of any further discussion of fraud, and
 22 Chevron should not be able to present that defense.
 23 I do think it's interesting to note that Justice
 24 Butler in Gibraltar, in part it's interesting because this
 25 is not for the pamphleteers in the room, an American Court,

05:47 1 MR. PATE: Those are citations in the Gibraltar
 2 system. If you want to look in our record, it's C-2388.
 3 PRESIDENT VEEDER: That's what I thought, yes.
 4 Can you just remind us what Torvia Limited is
 5 doing as a second Defendant?
 6 MR. PATE: Torvia Limited I guess I would say is
 7 the Gibraltar-based structure that is involved in the
 8 administration and distribution of proceeds from the
 9 Judgment, if ever there are any. It's not the only company
 10 that was set up to do that, but it's one of them.
 11 And I guess I should note, Torvia has now settled
 12 out. It was a company with specific connections to
 13 De Leon, and when Mr. De Leon withdrew from the scheme,
 14 that took Torvia with it.
 15 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Well, on the Judgment I'm
 16 looking at, there are only two Defendants. If those two
 17 go, who's left?
 18 MR. PATE: There have been Parties added since the
 19 document that you're looking at. Pablo Fajardo and Luis
 20 Yánza in addition to another of the corporate structures.
 21 My recollection is they're meant to answer, and we will
 22 learn whether they will actually appear or default, when,
 23 in early June? Is that right? Early June.
 24 So Amazonia Funding is the name of the other
 25 structure, and then it's Fajardo and Yánza who are the

05:49 1 remaining Gibraltar Defendants.
 2 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Are you going to deal with the
 3 situation in Ecuador as regards the Constitutional Court?
 4 MR. PATE: Well, Chevron's Constitutional Court
 5 submissions remain pending. I certainly couldn't give you
 6 any information about when the Constitutional Court is
 7 likely to do anything.
 8 PRESIDENT VEEDER: And, lastly, just for the
 9 record, we also have seen people outside, but you referred
 10 to pamphlets. Those are not in the record, and we don't
 11 propose to admit them into the record, and I think we can
 12 leave it there.
 13 Would you like to conclude?
 14 MR. PATE: I will conclude, thank you.
 15 One thing I hope you have been left with by my
 16 summary is that Chevron was obliged by the rules of
 17 sovereign immunity and jurisdiction to use multiple
 18 proceedings to defend against this fraud. This Tribunal
 19 uniquely is able to issue an opinion under international
 20 law in a proceeding with Ecuador as a party. In fact, only
 21 this Tribunal can provide vindication for Chevron's
 22 contract rights. It can't be done anywhere else. Ecuador
 23 cannot be made a party to U.S. litigation. It's also the
 24 case that Donziger can't be made a party here.
 25 So, therefore, only this Tribunal can hold Ecuador

05:52 1 overwhelming evidence, of the type you've heard here, that
 2 an official Government policy of promoting a corrupt
 3 judgment in defiance of lawful international injunctions is
 4 simply beyond the power of international law to redress.
 5 I respectfully suggest to you that when history
 6 assesses the work of this Tribunal, only one of those
 7 messages can possibly be seen as consistent with upholding
 8 the rule of law.
 9 So, with that, subject to more questions, either
 10 for me or other members of our team, with confidence in the
 11 wisdom, integrity and courage of this Tribunal, I confide
 12 Chevron's claims into your hands.
 13 Thank you.
 14 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Thank you very much.
 15 We had questions earlier, but they seem for the
 16 moment to have been largely answered for which we thank you
 17 very much. We don't exclude that there will be further
 18 questions, but they will not be for tonight. It's been a
 19 long day, and we would like to think about what we've
 20 heard, and also we would like to hear the Respondents
 21 tomorrow.
 22 I think unless there is some urgent housekeeping
 23 matters now, it's been a very long day for our shorthand
 24 writers, we will start with the Respondent at 9:00
 25 tomorrow.

05:51 1 accountable for its actions and it's uniquely important
 2 that it do so.
 3 Chevron seeks an injunction against further
 4 misconduct by Ecuador in support of this fraud. This
 5 relief will have value, even though Ecuador will not obey
 6 as it will further expose internationally that Ecuador's
 7 conduct is in violation of international law.
 8 Chevron, as you know, also believes that a strong
 9 and clear declaratory award from this Tribunal will be
 10 persuasive to enforcement courts. A refusal by those
 11 courts to enforce the fraudulent judgment will obviously
 12 protect Chevron but it will at the same time protect
 13 Ecuador against responsibility and damages for the
 14 potential greater liability that might arise from its
 15 enforcement campaign.
 16 And Chevron emphasizes again that if the Tribunal
 17 hopes to achieve this ends, then it must act as soon as
 18 possible on Track 1, on Track 2, or both.
 19 So, let me end where I began three weeks ago, and
 20 that's with what is at stake in the Tribunal's work, and in
 21 the Judgment it will issue, and that is the message that's
 22 going to be sent to investors and to host Governments. The
 23 message will be either that there is a right to justice
 24 guaranteed by international treaty and made effective by
 25 neutral tribunals or, instead, that notwithstanding

05:53 1 MR. BLOOM: Just one request, and I have spoken to
 2 counsel to Chevron about this, for personal reasons,
 3 they've agreed, and I'm asking the Tribunal if it's
 4 possible to begin 15 minutes earlier tomorrow at 8:45.
 5 PRESIDENT VEEDER: 8:45. Does that mean you want
 6 to finish 15 minutes earlier at 5:15?
 7 MR. BLOOM: We will keep to our schedule, but it
 8 gives a little bit more of a buffer in the event there are
 9 questions from the Tribunal.
 10 PRESIDENT VEEDER: Fair enough. So, 8:45
 11 tomorrow, but before that, at 8:44, we would like to put
 12 the Site Visit Order to be duly signed/countersigned,
 13 because we're way beyond its anniversary.
 14 (Whereupon, at 5:55 p.m., the hearing was
 15 adjourned until 8:45 a.m. the following day.)
 16
 17
 18
 19
 20
 21
 22
 23
 24
 25

CERTIFICATE OF REPORTER

I, David A. Kasdan, RDR-CRR, Court Reporter, do hereby certify that the foregoing proceedings were stenographically recorded by me and thereafter reduced to typewritten form by computer-assisted transcription under my direction and supervision; and that the foregoing transcript is a true and accurate record of the proceedings.

I further certify that I am neither counsel for, related to, nor employed by any of the parties to this action in this proceeding, nor financially or otherwise interested in the outcome of this litigation.


DAVID A. KASDAN